## Contents

1 Preliminaries ..... 3
2 The spectral theorem ..... 15
2.1 The Riemann-Stieltjes integral ..... 15
17
3 Selfadjoint extensions ..... 21
3.1 Selfadjoint extensions of symmetric operators ..... 21
3.2 Deficiency indices and points of regular type ..... 
4 Perturbation Theory
31
31
4.1 Closed operators
32
32

4.2 Selfadjoint operators.| 33 |
| :--- |
| 34 |

4.4 Application: Schrödinger operators
39
5 Operator semigroups
5.1 Motivation ..... 3
. Basic initions and properties ..... 45
5.3 Uniformly continuous semigroup ..... 52
5.4 Generator theorems ..... 57
63
5.6 Dissipative operators and contraction semigroups
6 Analytic semigroups ..... 69
References ..... 83
Problem Sheets ..... 85
Problem Sheet 1. ..... 86
87
Problem Sheet 2. Functions of bounded variation; spectral resolution.$\begin{array}{r}. \quad 86 \\ . \quad 87 \\ . \quad 88 \\ \hline\end{array}$
Problem Sheet 3. Spectral theorem.
Problem Sheet 4. Cayley transform ..... 89
Problem Sheet 5.89
90
91
Problem Sheet 6. ..... 91
92
Problem Sheet 7.
Problem Sheet 8. Problem Sheet 8. Relative boundedness; relative compactnessProblem Sheet 9. Core of a linear operator; exp; semigroups.Problem Sheet 109495
Problem Sheet 1197

These lecture notes are work in progress. They may be abandoned or changed radically at any moment. If you find mistakes or have suggestions how to improve them, please let me know.

## Chapter 1

## Preliminaries

In this chapter we collect some well-known facts from functional analysis.
Definition 1.1. Let $X$ be a vector space over $\mathbb{K} .(X,\|\cdot\|)$ is called a normed space with norm $\|\cdot\|$ if

$$
\|\cdot\|: X \rightarrow \mathbb{R}
$$

is a map such that for all $x, y \in X, \alpha \in \mathbb{K}$
(i) $\|x\|=0 \quad \Longleftrightarrow \quad x=0$,
(ii) $\|\alpha x\|=|\alpha|\|x\|$,
(iii) $\|x+y\| \leq\|x\|+\|y\|$.

If $\|\cdot\|$ satisfies only (ii) and (iii), it is called a seminorm.
Note that $\|x\| \geq 0$ for all $x \in X$ because $0=\|x-x\| \leq 2\|x\|$. The last inequality follows from the triangle inequality (iii) and (ii) with $\alpha=-1$.
Definition 1.2. A normed space $(X,\|\cdot\|)$ is a Banach space if it is complete with respect to the topology induced by $\|\cdot\|$.
Definition 1.3. Let $X$ be a $\mathbb{K}$-vector space. A map

$$
\langle\cdot, \cdot\rangle: X \times X \rightarrow \mathbb{K}
$$

is a sesquilinear form on $X$ if for all $x, y, z \in X, \lambda \in \mathbb{K}$
(i) $\langle\lambda x+y, z\rangle=\lambda\langle x, z\rangle+\langle y, z\rangle$,
(ii) $\langle x, \lambda y+z\rangle=\bar{\lambda}\langle x, y\rangle+\langle x, z\rangle$.

The inner product is called

- hermitian $\Longleftrightarrow\langle x, y\rangle=\overline{\langle y, x\rangle}, \quad x, z \in X$,
- positive semidefinite $\Longleftrightarrow\langle x, x\rangle \geq 0, \quad x \in X$,
- positive (definite) $\Longleftrightarrow\langle x, x\rangle>0, \quad x \in X \backslash\{0\}$

Definition 1.4. A positive definite hermitian sesquilinear form on a $\mathbb{K}$-vector $X$ is called an inner product on $X$ and $(X,\langle\cdot, \cdot\rangle)$ is called an inner product space (or pre-Hilbert space).

Note that for a hermitian sesquilinear form $\langle x, x\rangle \in \mathbb{R}$ for every $x \in X$ because $\langle x, x\rangle=\overline{\langle x, x\rangle}$.

Lemma 1.5 (Cauchy-Schwarz inequality). Let $X$ be a $\mathbb{K}$-vector space with inner product $\langle\cdot, \cdot\rangle$. Then for all $x, y \in X$

$$
\begin{equation*}
|\langle x, y\rangle|^{2} \leq|\langle x, x\rangle||\langle y, y\rangle|, \tag{1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

with equality if and only if $x$ and $y$ are linearly dependent.
Proof. For $x=0$ or $y=0$ there is nothing to show. Now assume that $y \neq 0$. For all $\lambda \in \mathbb{K}$

$$
0 \leq\langle x+\lambda y, x+\lambda y\rangle=\langle x, x\rangle+\lambda\langle y, x\rangle+\bar{\lambda}\langle x, y\rangle+|\lambda|^{2}\langle y, y\rangle .
$$

In particular, when we choose $\lambda=-\frac{\langle x, y\rangle}{\langle y, y\rangle}$ we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
0 \leq\langle x+\lambda y, x+\lambda y\rangle & =\langle x, x\rangle-\frac{|\langle y, x\rangle|^{2}}{\langle y, y\rangle}-\frac{|\langle x, y\rangle|^{2}}{\langle y, y\rangle}+\frac{|\langle x, y\rangle|^{2}}{\langle y, y\rangle} \\
& =\langle x, x\rangle-\frac{|\langle x, y\rangle|^{2}}{\langle y, y\rangle}
\end{aligned}
$$

which proves (1.1). If there exist $\alpha, \beta \in K$ such that $\alpha x+\beta y=0$, then obviously equality holds in (1.1). On the other hand, if equality holds, then $\langle x+\lambda y, x+\lambda y\rangle=0$ with $\lambda$ chosen as above, so $x$ and $y$ are linearly dependent.

Note that (1.1) is true also in a space $X$ with a semidefinite hermitian sesquilinea form but equality in (1.1) does not imply that $x$ and $y$ are linearly dependent.
Lemma 1.6. An inner product space $(X,\langle\cdot\rangle$,$) becomes a normed space by setting$ $\|x\|:=\langle x, x\rangle^{\frac{1}{2}}, x \in X$.
Definition 1.7. A complete inner product space is called a Hilbert space
Definition 1.8. Let $X, Y$ be normed spaces. A map $T: X \rightarrow Y$ is called a linear operator from $X$ to $Y$ if

$$
T(\alpha x+y)=\alpha T x+T y, \quad \alpha \in \mathbb{K}, x, y \in X .
$$

A linear operator $T$ from $X$ to $Y$ is called bounded with norm $\|T\|$ if

$$
\|T\|:=\sup \{\| T x]\|: x \in X,\| x \|=1\}<\infty .
$$

If $T$ is not bounded it is called unbounded. The set of all bounded linear operator from $X$ to $Y$ is denoted by $L(X, Y)$.

It is easy to check that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|T\| & =\sup \{\|T x\|: x \in X,\|x\|=1\} \\
& =\sup \{\|T x\|: x \in X,\|x\| \leq 1\} \\
& =\sup \left\{\frac{\|T x\|}{\|x\|}: x \in X, x \neq 0\right\} \\
& =\inf \{M \in \mathbb{R}: \forall x \in X\|T x\| \leq M\|x\|\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

and that the following is equivalent:
(i) $T$ is continuous.
(ii) $T$ is continuous in 0
(iii) $T$ is bounded
(iv) $T$ is uniformly continuous.

Theorem 1.9. Let $X, Y$ be normed spaces. Then $(L(X, Y),\|\cdot\|)$ is a normed space. If $Y$ is a Banach space, then $L(X, Y)$ is a Banach space.

Remark. Sometimes $T$ is defined only on a (not necessarily closed) subspace $\mathcal{D} \subset$ $X$. Then we write

$$
T: X \supseteq \mathcal{D}(T) \rightarrow Y
$$

if $\left.T\right|_{\mathcal{D}}: \mathcal{D} \rightarrow Y$ is a linear operator in the sense above. When the domain is not mentioned explicitely, we sometimes write $T(X, Y)$ or $T(X \rightarrow Y)$.

In general, linear operators which are not defined on all of $X$ will be unbounded.
Example 1.10. Let $X=\left(C[0,1],\|\cdot\|_{\infty}\right)$ be the space of the continuous functions
 $\mathcal{D}:=C^{1}[0,1]$ the space of the once continuously differentiable functions. Then the differential operator

$$
T: X \supseteq \mathcal{D} \rightarrow X, \quad T f=f^{\prime}
$$

is an unbounded linear operator.
Proof. Well-definedness and linearity is clear. For $n \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ define $f_{n} \in C[0,1]$ by $f_{n}(t)=t^{n}$. Obviously $\left\|f_{n}\right\|_{\infty}=1$ and $\left\|T f_{n}\right\|_{\infty}=n\left\|f_{n-1}\right\|_{\infty}=n$ for all $n \in \mathbb{N}$ Hence $T$ is unbounded.

The bounded linear maps from a normed space to $\mathbb{K}$ play a very important role.
Definition 1.11. Let $X$ be a normed space over $\mathbb{K}$. A bounded linear map $X \rightarrow \mathbb{K}$ is called a definebounded linear functional on $X$. The dual space $X^{\prime}$ of $X$ is the set all bounded bounded linear functionals on $X$, i. e., $X^{\prime}=L(X, \mathbb{K})$.

Note that by Theorem 1.9 the dual space is Banach space.
That the dual space of a Hilbert space is isomorphic to itself and that every Hilbert space is reflexive follows from the following theorem.

Theorem 1.12 (Fréchet-Riesz representation theorem). Let $H$ be a Hilbert space. Then the map

$$
\Phi: H \rightarrow H^{\prime}, \quad y \mapsto\langle\cdot, y\rangle
$$

is an isometric antilinear bijection.
We have the natural injection $X \rightarrow X^{\prime \prime}, x \mapsto \hat{x}$ where $\hat{x}\left(x^{\prime}\right)=x^{\prime}(x)$ for all $x \in X$ This map is an isometry. If it is even a bijection, then $X$ is called reflexive. Note that there are normed spaces which are not reflexive but nevertheless isomorphic to their bidual.

Theorem 1.13 (Hahn-Banach). Let $X$ be a normed space and $p: X \underset{Y^{\prime}}{ } \mathbb{R} a$ seminorm (a sublinear functional). Let $Y$ be a subspace of $X$ and $\varphi_{0} \in Y^{\prime}$ such that $\left|\varphi_{0}(y)\right| \leq p(y)$ for all $y \in Y$. Then there exists an extension $\varphi \in X^{\prime}$ of $\varphi_{0}$ with $\|\varphi\|=\left\|\varphi_{0}\right\|$ and $|\varphi(x)| \leq p(x)$ for all $x \in X$.

Example 1.14. Examples for dual spaces: Let $1 \leq p<\infty$ and $\frac{1}{p}+\frac{1}{q}=1$. Then

$$
\left.\left(\ell_{p}(\mathbb{N})\right)^{\prime}=\ell_{q}(\mathbb{N})\right), \quad\left(L_{p}(\Omega)\right)^{\prime}=L_{q}(\Omega)
$$

where $(\Omega, \Sigma, \mu)$ is a $\sigma$-finite measure space. Note that $\left(\ell_{\infty}(\mathbb{N})\right)^{\prime} \neq \ell_{1}(N)$ and $\left(L_{\infty}(\text { Omega })\right)^{\prime}=L_{1}(\Omega)$
Denote by $c_{0}(\mathbb{N})$ the space of all sequences $\left(x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ which converge to 0 . The $\left(c_{0}(\mathbb{N})\right)^{\prime}=\ell_{1}(\mathbb{N})$.
The analogon for function spaces is given by the following theorem.
Theorem 1.15 (Riesz representation theorem). Let $K$ be a compact metric space and $M(K)$ the set of regular Borel measures of finite variation on $K$. Then $(C(K))^{\prime}=M(K)$

An important role plays the uniform boundedness principle.
Theorem 1.16 (Uniform boundedness principle). Let $X$ be a complete metric space, $Y$ a normed space and $\mathcal{F} \subseteq C(X, Y)$ a family of continuous functions which is pointwise bounded, i.e.,

$$
\forall x \in X \quad \exists C_{x} \geq 0 \quad \forall f \in \mathcal{F} \quad\|f(x)\|<C_{x} .
$$

Then there exists an $M \in \mathbb{R}, x_{0} \in X$ and $r>0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\forall x \in B_{r}\left(x_{0}\right) \quad \forall f \in \mathcal{F} \quad\|f(x)\|<M . \tag{1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

The following is an immediate corollary of the uniform boundedness principle.
Theorem 1.17 (Banach-Steinhaus theorem). Let $X$ be a Banach space, $Y$ a normed space and $\mathcal{F} \subseteq L(X, Y)$ a family of continuous linear functions which is pointwise bounded, i.e.,

$$
\forall x \in X \quad \exists C_{x} \geq 0 \quad \forall f \in \mathcal{F} \quad\|f(x)\|<C_{x} .
$$

Then there exists an $M \in \mathbb{R}$ such that

$$
\|f\|<M, \quad f \in \mathcal{F} .
$$

## Linear operators

Definition 1.18. Let $X, Y$ be Banach spaces. A linear map $T \in L(X, Y)$ is called open if $T(U)$ is open in $Y$ for every open subset $U$ of $X$.

Theorem 1.19 (Open mapping theorem). Let $X, Y$ be Banach spaces and $T \in L(X, Y)$. Then $T$ is open if and only if it is surjective.

The open mapping theorem has the following important corollary
Corollary 1.20 (Inverse mapping theorem). Let $X, Y$ be Banach spaces and $T \in L(X, Y)$ a bijection. Then $T^{-1}$ exists and is continuous.

For the definition of a closed operator we introduce the graph of a linear operator Let $X, Y$ be Banach spaces. Then we can introduce a norm on $X \times Y$ by $\|(x, y)\|_{X \times Y}=$ $\|x\|+\|y\|$ or $\|(x, y)\|_{X \times Y}=\sqrt{\|x\|^{2}+\|y\|^{2}}$. The topolopies generated by either of these norms coincide.

Definition 1.21. Let $X, Y$ be Banach spaces, $\mathcal{D} \subseteq X$ a subspace of $X$ and $T$ : $X \supseteq X \rightarrow Y$ a linear operator. The graph $\mathrm{G}(T)$ is

$$
\mathrm{G}(T):=\{(x, T x): x \in \mathcal{D}\} \subseteq X \times Y .
$$

The linear operator $T$ is called closed if its graph is closed. It is called closable if the closure of its graph is the graph of a linear operator. If $\overline{\mathrm{G}(T)}=\mathrm{G}(\bar{T})$ then $\bar{T}$ is called the closure of $T$.
Obviously, the closure of a closable linear operator $T$ is unique and the smallest closed extension if $T$. The following characterisation of closed and closable operators is often useful.
Lemma 1.22. Let $X, Y$ normed space, $\mathcal{D} \subseteq X$ a subspace and $T: X \supseteq \mathcal{D} \rightarrow Y$.
(i) $T$ is closed if and only if for every sequence $\left(x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \subseteq \mathcal{D}$ the following is true:
$\left(x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ and $\left(T x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ converge

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Longrightarrow x_{0}:=\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} x_{n} \in \mathcal{D} \text { and } \lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} T x_{n}=T x_{0} \tag{1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

(ii) $T$ is closable if and only if for every sequence $\left(x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \subseteq \mathcal{D}$ the following is true:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} x_{n}=0 \text { and }\left(T x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \text { converges } \Longrightarrow \lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} T x_{n}=0 \tag{1.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

The closure $\bar{T}$ of $T$ is given by
$\mathcal{D}(\bar{T})=\left\{x \in X: \exists\left(x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \subseteq \mathcal{D}\right.$ with $\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} x_{n}=x$ and $\left(T x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ converges $\}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{T} x=\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left(T x_{n}\right) \quad \text { for } \quad{\left(x_{n}\right)}_{n \rightarrow \mathbb{N}}^{n \rightarrow \mathcal{D}} \text { with } \lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} x_{n}=x . \tag{1.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Theorem 1.23 (Closed graph theorem). Let $X, Y$ be Banach spaces and $T$ : $X \rightarrow Y$ be a closed linear operator. Then $T$ is bounded.
The following corollary shows how closedness and continuity are related
Lemma 1.24. Let $X, Y$ be Banach spaces, $\mathcal{D} \subseteq X$ a subspace and $T: \mathcal{D} \rightarrow Y$ linear. Then the following are equivalent:
(i) $T$ is closed and $\mathcal{D}(T)$ is closed.
(ii) $T$ is closed and $T$ is continuous.
(iii) $\mathcal{D}(T)$ is closed and $T$ is continuous.

Definition 1.25. Let $X, Y$ be Banach spaces, $\mathcal{D} \subseteq X$ a subspace and $T: X \supseteq$ $\mathcal{D} \rightarrow Y$ a linear operator. Then

$$
\|\cdot\|_{T}: \mathcal{D} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}, \quad\|x\|_{T}=\sqrt{\|x\|^{2}+\|T x\|^{2}}
$$

is called the graph norm of $T$.
It is easy to see that $\|\cdot\|_{T}$ is a norm on $\mathcal{D}$. Moreover, the norm defined above is equivalent to the norm $\|x\|_{T}^{\prime}=\sqrt{\|x\|^{2}+\|T x\|^{2}}$ on $\mathcal{D}$.
Note that the operator

$$
\widetilde{T}:\left(\mathcal{D}(T),\|\cdot\|_{\infty}\right) \rightarrow Y, \quad \widetilde{T} x=T x
$$

is continuous. In general we write $T$ instead of $\widetilde{T}$.

## Linear operators

Definition 1.26. Let $X, Y$ be Banach spaces and $\mathcal{D}(T) \subseteq X$ a dense subspace. For a linear map $T: X \supset \mathcal{D}(T) \rightarrow Y$ we define

$$
\mathcal{D}\left(T^{\prime}\right):=\left\{\varphi \in Y^{\prime}: x \mapsto \varphi(T x) \text { is a bounded linear functional on } \mathcal{D}(T)\right\},
$$

Since $\mathcal{D}(T)$ is dense in $X$, the $\operatorname{map}^{\mathcal{D}}(T) \rightarrow \mathbb{K}, x \mapsto \varphi(T x)$ has a unique continuous extension $T^{\prime} \varphi \in X^{\prime}$ for $\varphi \in \mathcal{D}\left(T^{\prime}\right)$. Hence the Banach space adjoint $T^{\prime}$

$$
T^{\prime}: Y^{\prime} \supseteq \mathcal{D}\left(T^{\prime}\right) \rightarrow X^{\prime}, \quad\left(T^{\prime} \varphi\right)(x)=\varphi(T x), \quad x \in \mathcal{D}(T), \varphi \in \mathcal{D}\left(T^{\prime}\right) .
$$

is well-defined.
If a linear operator acts between Hilbert spaces then its adjoint can be defined as above. However, we can also use the canonical identification of a Hilbert space with its dual to define its adjoint.

Definition 1.27. Let $H_{1}, H_{2}$ be Hilbert spaces and $\mathcal{D}(T) \subseteq H_{1}$ a dense subspace For a linear map $T: H_{1} \supseteq \mathcal{D}(T) \rightarrow H_{2}$ its Hilbert space adjoint $T^{*}$ is defined by

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{D}\left(T^{*}\right):= & \left\{y \in H_{2}: x \mapsto\langle T x, y\rangle \text { is a bounded on } \mathcal{D}(T)\right\}, \\
& T^{*}: H_{2} \supseteq \mathcal{D}\left(T^{*}\right) \rightarrow H_{1}, \quad T^{*} y=y^{*},
\end{aligned}
$$

where $y^{*} \in H_{1}$ such that $\langle T x, y\rangle=\left\langle x, y^{*}\right\rangle$ for all $x \in \mathcal{D}(T)$.
Note that for $y \in \mathcal{D}\left(T^{*}\right)$ the map $x \mapsto\langle T x, y\rangle$ is continuous and densely defined and can therefore be extended uniquely to an element $\varphi_{y} \in H_{1}^{\prime}$. By the Fréchet-Riesz representation theorem (Theorem 1.12) there exists exactly one $y^{*} \in H_{1}$ as desired.

Remark 1.28. Note that the application $T \mapsto T^{\prime}$ is linear wheras $T \mapsto T^{*}$ is antilinear (that is, $(\alpha T)^{*}=\bar{\alpha} T^{*}$ for $\alpha \in \mathbb{K}$ ).
If $\Phi_{1}$ and $\Phi_{2}$ are the maps of the Fréchet-Riesz representation theorem (Theorem1.12) corresponding to $H_{1}$ and $H_{2}$ respectively, then $T^{*}=\Phi_{1}^{-1} T^{\prime} \Phi_{2}$.
Note that $T$ is bounded if and only if its adjoint is bounded. In this case $\|T\|=\left\|T^{*}\right\|$. The following two theorems are true for Banach or Hilbert spaces
Theorem 1.29. Let $X, Y, Z$ be Banach spaces and $R(X \rightarrow Y), S(X \rightarrow Y), T(Y \rightarrow$ $Z)$ densely defined linear operators. Then
(i) $(R+S)^{\prime} \subseteq R^{\prime}+S^{\prime} \quad$ if $\mathcal{D}(R+S)=\mathcal{D}(R) \cap \mathcal{D}(S)$ is dense in $X$.
(ii) $(T S)^{\prime} \subseteq S^{\prime} T^{\prime} \quad$ if $\mathcal{D}(T S)=\{x \in \mathcal{D}(S): S x \in \mathcal{D}(T S)\}$ is dense in $X$.

Theorem 1.30. Let $X, Y$ be Banach spaces and $T(X \rightarrow Y)$ a densely defined linear operator. Then $T^{\prime}$ is closed.

Now we consider linear operators between Hilbert spaces
Theorem 1.31. Let $H_{1}, H_{2}$ be Hilbert spaces and $T\left(H_{1} \rightarrow H_{2}\right)$ a densely defined linear operator. Then the following is true.
(i) $T^{*}$ is closed.
(ii) If $T^{*}$ is densely defined, then $T \subseteq T^{* *}$.
(iii) If $T^{*}$ is densely defined and $S$ is a closed extension of $T$, then $T^{* *} \subseteq S$, in particular $T$ is closable and $\bar{T}=T^{* *}$.
(iv) If $T$ is closable then $T^{*}$ is densely defined and $\bar{T}=T^{* *}$.

Definition 1.32. Let $H_{1}, H_{2}$ be Hilbert spaces and $T\left(H_{1} \rightarrow H_{2}\right)$ a densely defined linear operator.
(i) $T$ is symmetric $\Longleftrightarrow T \subseteq T^{*}$.
(ii) $T$ is selfadjoint $\Longleftrightarrow T=T^{*}$.
(iii) $T$ is essentially selfadjoint $\Longleftrightarrow \bar{T}$ is selfadjoint.

Proposition 1.33. (i) $T$ symmetric $\Longrightarrow T \subseteq T^{* *} \subseteq T^{*}=T^{* * *}$.
(ii) $T$ closed and symmetric $\Longleftrightarrow T=T^{* *} \subseteq T^{*}$.
(iii) $T$ selfadjoint $\Longleftrightarrow T=T^{* *}=T^{*}$.
(iv) $T$ essentially selfadjoint $\Longleftrightarrow T \subseteq T^{* *}=T^{*}$.

Theorem 1.34. Let $H_{1}, H_{2}$ be Hilbert spaces and $T\left(H_{1} \rightarrow H_{2}\right)$ a densely defined linear operator.
(i) $\underline{\operatorname{rg}(T)^{\perp}}=\operatorname{ker}\left(T^{*}\right)$.
(ii) $\overline{\operatorname{rg}(T)}=\operatorname{ker}\left(T^{*}\right)^{\perp}$.
(iii) $\operatorname{rg}\left(T^{*}\right)^{\perp}=\operatorname{ker}(T *)$.
(iv) $\frac{\operatorname{rg}\left(T^{*}\right)}{}=\operatorname{ker}(T *)^{\perp}$.

Theorem 1.35 (Hellinger-Toeplitz). Let $H$ be a Hilbert space, $T: H \rightarrow H a$ Theorem
linear operator such that $\langle T x, y\rangle=\langle x, T y\rangle$ for all $x, y \in H$ (that is, $T$ is formally symmetric). Then $T$ is bounded

## Spectrum of linear operapors

Definition 1.36. Let $X$ be a Banach space and $T(X \rightarrow X)$ a densely defined linear operator.

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\rho(T):=\{\lambda \in \mathbb{C}: \lambda \text { id }-T \text { is bijective }\} & \text { resolvent set of } T, \\
\sigma(T):=\mathbb{C} \backslash \rho(T) & \text { spectrum of } T .
\end{array}
$$

The spectrum of $T$ is further divided in point spectrum $\sigma_{\mathrm{p}}(T)$, continuous spectrum $\sigma_{c}(T)$ and residual spectrum $\sigma_{\mathrm{r}}(T)$ :
$\sigma_{\mathrm{p}}(T):=\{\lambda \in \mathbb{C}: \lambda \mathrm{id}-T$ is not injective $\}$,
$\sigma_{c}(T):=\{\lambda \in \mathbb{C}: \lambda$ id $-T$ is injective, $\operatorname{rg}(T-\lambda \mathrm{id}) \neq X, \overline{\operatorname{rg}(T-\lambda \mathrm{id})}=X\}$,
$\sigma_{\mathrm{r}}(T):=\{\lambda \in \mathbb{C}: \lambda \mathrm{id}-T$ is injective, $\overline{\operatorname{rg}(T-\lambda \mathrm{id})} \neq X\}$.
It follows immediately from the definition that

$$
\sigma(T)=\sigma_{\mathrm{p}}(T) \dot{\cup} \sigma_{\mathrm{c}}(T) \dot{\cup} \sigma_{\mathrm{r}}(T)
$$

In the following, we often write $\lambda-T$ instead of $\lambda$ id $-T$.
Remark 1.37. If $T$ is closed, then $(T-\lambda)^{-1}$ is closed if it exists. Therefore, by the closed graph theorem,

$$
\rho(T)=\left\{\lambda \in \mathbb{C}: T-\lambda \text { is injective and }(T-\lambda)^{-1} \in L(X)\right\} .
$$

Often the resolvent set of a linear operator is defined slightly different: Let $T(X \rightarrow$ $X)$ is a densely defined linear operator. Then $\lambda \in \rho(T)$ if and only if $\lambda-T$ is bijective and $(\lambda-T) \in L(X)$. With this definition it follows that $\rho(T)=\emptyset$ for every non-closed $T(X \rightarrow X)$ because one of the following cases holds:
(i) $\lambda-T$ is not bijective $\Longrightarrow \lambda \notin \rho(T)$;
(ii) $\lambda-T$ is bijective, then $(\lambda-T)^{-1}$ is defined everywhere and closed, so by the closed graph theorem it cannot be bounded, which implies $\lambda \notin \rho(T)$.

Remark 1.38. (i) If $T$ is bounded, then $\sigma(T) \neq \emptyset$ and $\sigma(T) \subseteq\{\lambda \in \mathbb{C}:|\lambda| \leq$ $\|T\|\}$.
(ii) If $T$ is unbounded, then $\sigma(T)=\emptyset$ is possible.

Lemma 1.39. Let $X$ be a Banach space and $T(X \rightarrow X)$ a closed linear operator. Then the resolvent set $\rho(T)$ is open and the resolvent map

$$
\rho(T) \rightarrow L(H), \quad \lambda \mapsto R(\lambda, T):=(\lambda-T)^{-1}
$$

is analytic. Moreover
(i) $\left\|R\left(\lambda_{0}, T\right)\right\| \geq \frac{1}{\operatorname{dist}\left(\lambda_{0}, \sigma(T)\right)}$ for all $\lambda_{0} \in \rho(T)$.
(ii) For $\lambda_{0} \in \rho(T)$ and $\lambda \in \mathbb{C}$ with $\left|\lambda-\lambda_{0}\right|<\left\|R\left(\lambda_{0}, T\right)\right\|^{-1}$

$$
R(\lambda, T)=\sum_{n=0}^{\infty}\left(\lambda_{0}-\lambda\right)^{n}\left(R\left(\lambda_{0}, T\right)\right)^{n+1}
$$

Let $X$ be a Banach space and $T \in L(X)$. Then the spectral radius of $T$ is defined by $r(T):=\lim \sup _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left\|T^{n}\right\|^{1 / n}$. The spectral radius gives an estimate for the spectrum of $T$.

Theorem 1.40. For a Banach space $X$ and $T \in L(X)$ the following holds:
(i) $r(T)=\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left\|T^{n}\right\|^{1 / n}$, in particular $r(T) \leq\|T\|$.
(ii) $\sigma(T) \subseteq\{\lambda \in \mathbb{C}:|\lambda| \leq r(T)\}$.
(iii) If $X$ is a complex Banach space, then $r(T)=\max \{|\lambda|: \lambda \in \sigma(T)\}$.
(iv) If $X$ is a Hilbert space, then $r(T)=\|T\|$.

It can be shown that a linear operator $T$ on a complex Hilbert space $H$ is symmetric if and only if $\langle T x, x\rangle \in \mathbb{R}$ for all $x \in \mathcal{D}(T)$ and that $\sigma(T) \subseteq \mathbb{R}$. The next theorems show how the spectrum of a symmetric operator $T$ is related to selfadjointness of

## Projections

Definition 1.41. Let $X$ be Banach space. An operator $P: X \rightarrow X$ is called projection if and only of $P^{2}=P$.

Remark 1.42. (i) If $P$ is an projection then also id $-P$ is an projection.
(ii) If $P \in L(X)$ is an projection then either $\|P\|=0$ or $\|P\| \geq 1$.

Definition 1.43. Let $H$ be Hilbert space. A projection $P \in L(H)$ is called orthogonal projection if there exists a closed subspace $U \subseteq H$ such that $\operatorname{rg} P=U$ and $\operatorname{ker} U=(\operatorname{rg} P)^{\perp}$.
In this case, $\|P\|=0$ or $\|P\|=1$.

Note that every $x \in H$ can be written as $x=P x+(1-P) x$. If $P$ is an orthogonal projection on $U$, then $P x$ is the unique element in $U$ such that $\|x-P x\|=\operatorname{dist}(x, U)$. In the following, we collect some useful results on orthogonal projections.
Theorem 1.44. Let $H$ be a Hilbert space, $P \in L(H)$ a projection with $P \neq 0$. The the following are equivalent.
(i) $P$ is an orthogonal projection.
(ii) $\|P\|=1$.
(iii) $\|P\|$ is selfadjoint.
(iv) $\|P\|$ is normal (i.e. $P P^{*}=P^{*} P$ ).
(v) $\langle P x, x\rangle \geq 0$ for all $x \in H$

Theorem 1.45. Let $H$ be a Hilbert space, $P, Q \in L(H)$ orthogonal projections.
(i) The the following are equivalent:
(a) $P Q$ is an orthogonal projection.
(b) $Q P$ is an orthogonal projection.
(c) $P Q=Q P$ is an orthogonal projection.

In this case $\operatorname{rg}(P Q)=\operatorname{rg}(Q P)=\operatorname{rg}(P) \cap \operatorname{rg}(Q)$.
(ii) The the following are equivalent:
(a) $P+Q$ is an orthogonal projection.
(b) $P Q=Q P=0$.
(c) $\operatorname{rg}(P) \perp \operatorname{rg}(Q)$.
(iii) The the following are equivalent:
(a) $P-Q$ is an orthogonal projection.
(b) $P Q=Q P=Q$.
(c) $\operatorname{rg}(Q) \subseteq \operatorname{rg}(P)$.
(d) $\|Q x\| \leq\|P x\|$ for all $x \in H$.
(e) $\langle Q x, x\rangle \leq\langle P x, x\rangle$ for all $x \in H$.

Theorem 1.46. Every monotonic sequence of orthogonal projections $\left(P_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ converges strongly to an orthogonal projection.
If the sequence is increasing, then the strong limit is the orthotgonal projection on $\bigcup_{n \in \mathrm{r}}^{\mathrm{r}} \mathrm{rg} P_{n}$.
If the sequence is decreasing, then the strong limit is the orthotgonal projection on $\bigcap_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \operatorname{rg} P_{n}$.

## Compact linear operators

Definition 1.47. Let $X, Y$ be normed spaces. An operator $T \in L(X, Y)$ is called compact if for every bounded set $A \subseteq X$ the set $T(A)$ is relatively compact. The set of all compact operators from $X$ to $Y$ is denoted by $K(X, Y)$.
Sometimes compact operators are called completely continuous.
Remarks 1.48. (i) Every compact linear operator is bounded.
(ii) $T \in L(X, Y)$ is compact if and only if for every bounded sequence $\left(x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ the sequence $\left(T x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ contains a convergent subsequence.
(iii) $T \in L(X, Y)$ is compact if and only if $T\left(B_{X}(0,1)\right)$ is relatively compact.
(iv) Let $T \in L(X, Y)$ with finite dimensional $\operatorname{rg}(T)$. The $T$ is compact.
(v) The identity map id $\in L(X)$ is compact if and only if $X$ is finite-dimensional.
(vi) $K(X)$ is a two-sided closed ideal in $L(X)$.

Theorem 1.49 (Schauder). Let $X, Y$ be Banach space and $T \in L(X, Y)$. Then $T$ is compact if and only if $T^{\prime}$ is compact.

Let $X$ be a vector space and $T: X \rightarrow X$ a linear operator. Note that for $\lambda \in \mathbb{C} \backslash\{0\}$ the ascent $\alpha(\lambda-T)$ and the descent $\delta(\lambda-T)$ are finite and equal where
$\alpha(\lambda-T):= \begin{cases}\min \left\{k \in \mathbb{N}_{0}: \operatorname{ker}(\lambda-T)^{k}=\operatorname{ker}(\lambda-T)^{k+1}\right\}, & \text { if the minimum exists, } \\ \infty & \text { else }\end{cases}$
$\delta(\lambda-T):= \begin{cases}\min \left\{k \in \mathbb{N}_{0}: \operatorname{rg}(\lambda-T)^{k}=\operatorname{rg}(\lambda-T)^{k+1}\right\}, & \text { if the minimum exists, } \\ \infty & \text { else. }\end{cases}$

The number $p:=\alpha(\lambda-T)=\delta(\lambda-T)$ is called the Riesz index of $\lambda-T$.
Theorem 1.50 (Spectrum of a compact operator). Let $X$ be a Banach space For a compact operator $T \in L(X)$ the following holds.
(i) If $\lambda \in \mathbb{C} \backslash\{0\}$, then $\lambda$ either belongs to $\rho(T)$ or it is an eigenvalue of $T$, that is $\mathbb{C} \backslash\{0\} \subseteq \rho(T) \cup \sigma_{p}(T)$.
(ii) The spectrum of $T$ is at most countable and 0 is the only possible accumulation point.
(iii) If $\lambda \in \sigma(T) \backslash\{0\}$, then the dimension of the algebraic eigenspace $\mathcal{A}_{\lambda}(T)$ is finite and $\mathcal{A}_{\lambda}(T)=\operatorname{ker}(\lambda-T)^{p}$ where $p$ is the Riesz index of $\lambda-T$
(iv) $X=\operatorname{ker}(\lambda-T)^{p} \oplus \operatorname{rg}(\lambda-T)^{p}$ for $\lambda \in \sigma(T) \backslash\{0\}$ where $p$ is the Riesz index of $\lambda-T$ and $\operatorname{ker}(\lambda-T)^{p}$ and $\operatorname{rg}(\lambda-T)^{p}$ are $T$-invariant.
(v) $\sigma_{p}(T) \backslash\{0\}=\sigma_{p}\left(T^{\prime}\right) \backslash\{0\}$ and $\sigma(T)=\sigma\left(T^{\prime}\right)$. If $H$ is a Hilbert space then $\sigma_{p}(T) \backslash\{0\}=\left\{\lambda \in \mathbb{C}: \bar{\lambda} \in \sigma_{p}\left(T^{*}\right)\right\} \backslash\{0\}=\overline{\sigma_{p}\left(T^{*}\right)} \backslash\{0\}$, where the bar denotes complex conjugation, and $\sigma(T)=\left\{\lambda \in \mathbb{C}: \bar{\lambda} \in \sigma\left(T^{*}\right)\right\}=\overline{\sigma\left(T^{*}\right)}$.

Theorem 1.51 (Spectral theorem for compact selfadjoint operators). Let $H$ be a Hilbert space and $T \in L(H)$ a compact selfadjoint operator.
(i) There exists an orthonormal system $\left(\mathrm{e}_{n}\right)_{n=1}^{N}$ of eigenvectors of $T$ with eigen values $\left(\lambda_{n}\right)_{n=1}^{N}$ where $N \in \mathbb{N} \cup\{\infty\}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
T x=\sum_{n=1}^{N} \lambda_{n}\left\langle x, \mathrm{e}_{n}\right\rangle \mathrm{e}_{n}, \quad x \in H . \tag{1.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

The $\lambda_{n}$ can be chosen such that $\left|\lambda_{1}\right| \geq\left|\lambda_{2}\right| \geq \cdots>0$. The only possible accumulation point of the sequence $\left(\lambda_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ is 0 .
(ii) If $P_{0}$ is the orthogonal projection on $\operatorname{ker} T$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
x=P_{0} x+\sum_{n=1}^{N}\left\langle x, \mathrm{e}_{n}\right\rangle \mathrm{e}_{n}, \quad x \in H . \tag{1.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

(iii) If $\lambda \in \rho(T), \lambda \neq 0$

$$
(\lambda-T)^{-1} x=\lambda^{-1} P_{0} x+\sum_{n=1}^{N} \frac{\left\langle x, \mathrm{e}_{n}\right\rangle}{\lambda_{n}-\lambda} \mathrm{e}_{n}, \quad x \in H .
$$

Note that the representation in (1.6) is not unique. A unique represention is obtained if we define orthogonal projections $P_{j}$ on the eigenspaces corrsponding to $\mu_{j}$ where the $\mu_{j}$ are the pairwise distinct non-zero eigenvalues of $T$. Then for all $x \in H$

$$
\begin{equation*}
T x=\sum_{n=1}^{N} \mu_{n} P_{n} x, \quad x=P_{0} x+\sum_{n=1}^{N} P_{n} x . \tag{1.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note also that $T=\sum_{n=1}^{N} \mu_{n} P_{n}$ in the operator norm.

## Interpretation/Application of the spectral theorem

Diagonalisation of $T$.
From finite dimensional linear algebra it is known that for every hermitian linear From finite dimensional linear algebra it is known that for every hermitian linear
operator $T$ there exists an orthoganal basis with respect to which the matrix representation of $T$ has diagonal form. Writing $T$ as an infinite matrix with respect to the orthogonal system introduced in Theorem 1.51 (i) we obtain

$$
T x=\left(\begin{array}{cccc}
\lambda_{1} & & & \\
& \lambda_{2} & & \\
& & \lambda_{3} & \\
& & & \ddots
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{c}
x_{1} \\
x_{2} \\
x_{3} \\
\vdots
\end{array}\right)
$$

where $x=\sum_{n=1}^{N} x_{n} \mathrm{e}_{n}=\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, x_{3}, \ldots\right)^{t}$. Note that $x_{n}=\left\langle x, e_{n}\right\rangle$.
$T$ is unitarily equivalent to a multiplication operator on an $L_{2}$-space.
Assume that $\operatorname{ker} T=\{0\}$. Then from the above representation it is clear that

$$
T=U M_{T} U^{-1}
$$

where

$$
U: H=\overline{\operatorname{rg}(T)} \rightarrow \ell(\mathbb{N}), \quad U\left(\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \alpha_{n} \mathrm{e}_{n}\right)=\left(\alpha_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}
$$

and

$$
M_{T}: \ell(\mathbb{N}) \rightarrow \ell(\mathbb{N}), \quad M_{T} x=\left(\lambda x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \quad \text { for } x=\left(x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}} .
$$

If $T$ has only finitely many eigenvalues then the space $\ell(\mathbb{N})$ has to be replaced by $\ell(\{1,2, \ldots, N\})$ and the operator $U$ has to be modified accordingly.
$T$ as an integral.
Assume that all eigenvalues of $T$ are positive: $\mu_{1}<\mu_{2}<\cdots<0$ and let $P_{j}$ be the orthogonal projection on the eigenspace corresponding to $\mu_{j}$. Define $E_{\lambda}=$ $\sum_{\mu_{j}<\lambda} P_{j}$. Then $P_{n}=E_{\lambda_{n}}-E_{\lambda_{n-1}}=: \Delta E_{n}$ and therefore

$$
T=\sum_{n=1}^{N} \mu_{n} P_{n}=\sum_{n=1}^{N} \mu_{n}\left(E_{\lambda_{n}}-E_{\lambda_{n-1}}\right)=\sum_{n=1}^{N} \mu_{n} \Delta E_{\lambda_{n}} .
$$

Functional calculus for $T$.
If $f$ is a bounded function defined on $\sigma(T)$ then we can define $f(T)$ by

$$
f(T)=\sum_{n=1}^{N} f\left(\mu_{n}\right) P_{n} .
$$

When $f$ is polynomial, this definition coincides with the usual definition of the polynomial of a bounded linear operator. Also for $f(x)=\left(\lambda_{0}-x\right)^{-1}$ where $\lambda \in \rho(T)$ the definition above and the usual definition coincide. Note that for an eigenvector $x$ of $T$ with eigenvalue $\mu$ we have that $f(T) x=f(\mu) x$.

In the next chapter we will see how the above can be extended to selfadjoint linear operators that are not necessarily compact.

Remark 2.6. The following can be shown

- $C[a, b] \subseteq I[a, b]$.
- If $f \in I[a, b]$, then $f(x+0)$ exists for $x \in[a, b)$ and $f(x-0)$ exists for $x \in(a, b]$, where as usual $f(x \pm 0):=f(x \pm):=\lim _{\varepsilon \backslash 0} f(x \pm \varepsilon)$.

Integration with respect to $\alpha \in \operatorname{BV}[a, b]$
Definition 2.7. Fix $\alpha \in \operatorname{BV}[a, b]$. For $f=\binom{t_{0}, t_{1}, \ldots, t_{n}}{c_{1}, \ldots, c_{n}} \in T[a, b]$ define

$$
i_{\alpha}(f):=\int f \mathrm{~d} \alpha:=\sum_{j=1}^{n} c_{j}\left(\alpha\left(t_{j}\right)-\alpha\left(t_{j-1}\right)\right) .
$$

Observe that $i_{\alpha}(f)$ is independent of the representation of $f$, hence it is well defined. Obviously, $i_{\alpha}$ is linear in $f$ and

$$
\left|i_{\alpha}(f)\right| \leq \sum_{j=1}^{n}\left|c_{j}\left\|\alpha\left(t_{j}\right)-\alpha\left(t_{j-1}\right) \mid \leq\right\| f \|_{\infty} \operatorname{var} \alpha, \quad f \in T[a, b] .\right.
$$

Proposition 2.8. The function $i_{\alpha}:\left(T[a, b],\| \|_{\text {infty }}\right) \rightarrow \mathbb{K}$ is a bounded linear function with $\left\|i_{\alpha}\right\| \leq \operatorname{var} \alpha$. It can be extended to a continuous linear operator $\hat{i}_{\alpha}: I[a, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{K}$. The extension is unique and $\left\|\hat{i}_{\alpha}\right\|=\left\|i_{\alpha}\right\|$.

For $f \in I[a, b]$, we write

$$
\int f \mathrm{~d} \alpha:=\hat{i}_{\alpha}(f)
$$

Note that for $f \in I[a, b]$

$$
\left\|\int f d \alpha\right\|=\left\|\hat{i}_{\alpha}(f)\right\| \leq\left\|\hat{i}_{\alpha}\right\|\|f\|_{\infty}=\left\|i_{\alpha}\right\|\|f\|_{\infty}=\operatorname{var} \alpha\|f\|_{\infty} .
$$

If $\alpha \in \operatorname{BV}[a, b]$ and $\left[a^{\prime}, b^{\prime}\right] \subseteq[a, b]$, then it is easy to see that $\left.\alpha\right|_{\left[a^{\prime}, b^{\prime}\right]} \in \operatorname{BV}\left[a^{\prime}, b^{\prime}\right]$.
Proposition 2.9. For $\alpha \in \mathrm{BV}[a, b], f \in I[a, b]$ and $x \in[a, b]$ let

$$
K:[a, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{K}, \quad K(x):=\int_{a}^{x} f \mathrm{~d} \alpha, \quad \text { if } x \in(a, b] \quad \text { and } \quad K(a)=0 .
$$

Then we have:
(i) $K \in \operatorname{BV}[a, b]$ and $K(a)=0$.
(ii) If $f$ is right-continuous then $K$ is right continuous.
(iii) For all $g \in I[a, b]$ we have $\int g d K=\int g f d \omega$.

Proof. Exercise 2.1.
Proposition 2.9 shows that $\mathrm{BV}[a, b] \subseteq(C[a, b])^{\prime}$. The reverse inclusion is shown in the following theorem.

Theorem 2.10 (F. Riesz). $\omega$ is right-continuous in $(a, b) ;$ For $\varphi \in(C[a, b])^{\prime}$ there exists a unique $\omega \in \operatorname{BV}[a, b]$ satisfying
(i) $\omega$ is right-continuous in $(a, b)$;
(ii) $\omega(a)=0$;
(iii) $\varphi(f)=\int f \mathrm{~d} \omega$ for all $f \in C[a, b]$;
(iv) $\operatorname{var} \omega=\|\varphi\|$.

Proof. A proof can be found for instance in [Tay58, §4.32] (A. Taylor, Introduction to Functional Analysis).

Remark 2.11. Without conditions (i) and (ii) the representation of $\varphi$ as a function $\omega \in \operatorname{BV}[a, b]$ is not unique.

### 2.2 Spectral families

Definition 2.12. Let $H$ be a Hilbert space. $\left(E_{\lambda}\right)_{\lambda \in \mathbb{R}} \subseteq L(H)$ is called a spectral family (or spectral resolution of the identity) if and only in for all $x \in H$ we have:
(i) $E_{\lambda}$ is an orthogonal projection for all $\lambda \in \mathbb{R}$.
(ii) $E_{\lambda} E_{\mu}=E_{\mu} E_{\lambda}=E_{\mu}$ for $\mu \leq \lambda$.
(iii) $E_{\mu} x \rightarrow E_{\lambda} x$ if $\mu \searrow \lambda$ (strong-right continuity)
(iv) $E_{\mu} x \rightarrow x$ for $x \rightarrow \infty$
(v) $E_{\mu} x \rightarrow 0$ for $x \rightarrow-\infty$.

Remark 2.13. Let $\left(E_{\lambda}\right)_{\lambda \in \mathbb{R}}$ be a spectral family.
(i) If $\mu<\lambda$, then $E_{\mu}<E_{\lambda}$ by (i) and (ii) and Theorem 1.45 (iii).
(ii) Since $\left(E_{\lambda}\right)_{\lambda}$ is increasing, then, by Theorem 1.46, the strong left limit exists and is an orthogonal projection (that is, for all $\lambda \in \mathbb{R}$ and $x \in H$ the limit $\lim _{\lambda \zeta^{\mu}} E_{\lambda} x$ exists). Note, however, that in general $E(\lambda) \neq s-\lim _{\lambda \ell^{\mu}} E_{\lambda}$

Notation 2.14. Let $\left(E_{\lambda}\right)_{\lambda \in \mathbb{R}}$ be a spectral family.

- Instead of $E_{\lambda}$ we also write $E(\lambda)$.
- Let $-\infty \leq a<b \leq \infty$. Then

$$
\begin{array}{rlrl}
E((a, b]) & :=E(b)-E(a), & E([a, b)):=E(b-)-E(a), \\
E((a, b)) & :=E(b-)-E(a-), & E([a, b]):=E(b)-E(a-), \\
E(\{b\}) & :=E(b)-E(b-) & &
\end{array}
$$

$$
\text { where } E(-\infty):=0 \text { and } E(\infty):=\text { id. }
$$

Example 2.15. Let $T \in L(H)$ be a compact self-adjoint operator with eigenvalue $\left|\lambda_{1}\right| \geq\left|\lambda_{2}\right| \geq \ldots>0, \lambda_{j} \neq \lambda_{h}$ for $j \neq h$, and let $P_{j}$ be the projection on the eigenspace corresponding to $\lambda_{j}$
For $\lambda \in \mathbb{R}$ and $x \in H$ define

$$
E_{\lambda} x:= \begin{cases}\sum_{\lambda_{j} \leq \lambda} P_{j} x, & \text { if } \lambda<0 \\ x-\sum_{\lambda_{j}>\lambda} P_{j} x & \text { if } \lambda \geq 0 .\end{cases}
$$

Then $\left(E_{\lambda}\right)_{\lambda}$ is a spectral family (the spectral resolution of T).
Proof. Exercise 2.2

Lemma 2.16 (Properties of spectral families). Every spectral family $\left(E_{\lambda}\right)_{\lambda \in \mathbb{R}}$ satisfies the following:
(i) $E_{\lambda}-E_{\mu}$ is an orthogonal projection if $\mu \leq \lambda$
(ii) If $\lambda_{1} \leq \lambda_{2} \leq \lambda_{3} \leq \lambda_{4}$,

$$
\left(E_{\lambda_{2}}-E_{\lambda_{1}}\right)\left(E_{\lambda_{4}}-E_{\lambda_{3}}\right)=\left(E_{\lambda_{4}}-E_{\lambda_{3}}\right)\left(E_{\lambda_{2}}-E_{\lambda_{1}}\right)=0 .
$$

(iii) If $\lambda_{1}<\lambda_{2}<\lambda_{3}$ and $x \in H$,
$\|\left(E_{\lambda_{3}}-E_{\lambda_{1}} x\left\|^{2}=\right\|\left(E_{\lambda_{3}}-E_{\lambda_{2}}\right) x\left\|^{2}+\right\|\left(E_{\lambda_{2}}-E_{\lambda_{1}}\right) x \|^{2}=\left\langle\left(E_{\lambda_{3}}-E_{\lambda_{1}}\right) x, x\right\rangle\right.$.
(iv) For fixed $x \in H$ the function $\lambda \longmapsto\left\langle E_{\lambda} x, x\right\rangle$ is monotonically increasing and bounded by $\|x\|^{2}$.
(v) The function $\lambda \longmapsto E_{\lambda}$ is strongly right-continuous. For every $\lambda \in \mathbb{R}$ the strong left limit exists and is an orthogonal projection but in general $E_{\lambda_{-}} \neq$ $E_{\lambda}=E_{\lambda+}$.
(vi) For all $x, y \in H$ the function $\omega_{x y}: \lambda \longmapsto\left\langle E_{\lambda} x, y\right\rangle$ belongs to $\operatorname{BV}[a, b]$ for every $[a, b] \subseteq \mathbb{R}$ and $\operatorname{var} \omega_{x y} \mid[a, b] \leq\|x\|\|y\|$.

Proof. (i) follows from properties of orthogonal projections (Theorem 1.45).
(ii) is verified by straightforward calculation.
(iii) Since ( $E_{\lambda_{3}}-E_{\lambda_{1}}$ ) is a projection we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|\left(E_{\lambda_{3}}-E_{\left.\lambda_{1}\right)} x \|^{2}\right. & =\left\langle\left(E_{\lambda_{3}}-E_{\lambda_{1}}\right)^{2} x, x\right\rangle \\
& =\left\langle\left(E_{\lambda_{3}}-E_{\lambda_{1}}\right) x, x\right\rangle \\
& =\left\langle\left(E_{\lambda_{3}}-E_{\lambda_{2}}\right) x, x\right\rangle+\left\langle\left(E_{\lambda_{2}}-E_{\lambda_{1}}\right) x, x\right\rangle \\
& =\left\|\left(E_{\lambda_{3}}-E_{\lambda_{2}}\right) x\right\|^{2}+\left\|\left(E_{\lambda_{2}}-E_{\lambda_{1}}\right) x\right\|^{2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

(iv) follows from properties of orthogonal projections (Theorem 1.45) and the fact that $\left\langle E_{\lambda} x, x\right\rangle \leq\left\|E_{\lambda}\right\|\|x\|^{2} \leq\|x\|^{2}$.
(v) follows from Theorem 1.46.
(vi) Fix $x, y \in H$ and $[a, b] \subseteq \mathbb{R}$. For every partition $a=t_{0}<t_{1}<\ldots<t_{n}=b$ of $[a, b]$

$$
\begin{align*}
& \sum_{j=1}^{n}\left|\omega_{x y}\left(t_{j}\right)-\omega_{x y}\left(t_{j-1}\right)\right|=\sum_{j=1}^{n}\left|\left\langle\left(E_{t_{j}}-E_{t_{j-1}}\right) x, y\right\rangle\right| \\
&=\sum_{j=1}^{n}\left|\left\langle\left(E_{t_{j}}-E_{t_{j-1}}\right) x,\left(E_{t_{j}}-E_{t_{j-1}}\right) y\right\rangle\right| \\
& \leq \sum_{j=1}^{n}\left\|\left(E_{t_{j}}-E_{t_{j-1}}\right) x\right\|\left\|\left(E_{t_{j}}-E_{t_{j-1}}\right) y\right\| \\
& \leq\left(\sum_{j=1}^{n}\left\|\left(E_{t_{j}}-E_{t_{j-1}}\right) x\right\|^{2}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}\left(\sum_{j=1}^{n}\left\|\left(E_{t_{j}}-E_{t_{j-1}}\right) y\right\|^{2}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}  \tag{2.1}\\
&=\left\|\left(E_{b}-E_{a}\right) x\right\|\left\|\left(E_{b}-E_{a}\right) y\right\| \tag{2.2}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& =\|\left(L_{b}-1\right. \\
& \leq\|x\|\|y\|
\end{aligned}
$$

where in (2.1) we used the Cauchy-Schwarz inequality and in (2.2) we used (iii). $\quad \square$

Definition 2.17 (Integration with respect to a spectral family). Let $H$ be a Hilbert space and $\left(E_{\lambda}\right)_{\lambda \in \mathbb{R}}$ a spectral family. For a step function $f=\binom{t_{0}, t_{1}, \ldots, t_{n}}{c_{1}, \ldots, c_{n}} \in$ $T[a, b]$ we define in analogy to definition 2.7 the integral with respect to $\left(E_{\lambda}\right)_{\lambda \in \mathbb{R}}$ by

$$
\int_{a}^{b} f \mathrm{~d} E_{\lambda}=\sum_{j=1}^{n} c_{j}\left(E_{t_{j}}-E_{t_{j-1}}\right) .
$$

Observe that the integral does not depend on the representation of $f$.
Theorem 2.18. $\left(T[a, b],\|\cdot\|_{\infty}\right) \rightarrow L(H), f \mapsto \int_{a}^{b} f \mathrm{~d} E_{\lambda}$ is a bounded linear map with bound $\leq 1$.

Proof.
Definition 2.19. By the theorem above there exists exactly one continuous extension of $\int_{a}^{b} \cdot \mathrm{~d} E_{\lambda}$ from the space $T[a, b]$ to $I[a, b]=T[a, b]$. This extension will again be denoted by

$$
\int_{a}^{b} f \mathrm{~d} E_{\lambda} \quad \text { for } \quad f \in I[a, b]
$$

is a bounded linear map with bound $\leq 1$
Note that the extension has norm $\leq 1$.
Lemma 2.20 (Properties of the integral). Let $\left(E_{\lambda}\right)_{\lambda \in \mathbb{R}}$ be a spectral resolution on a Hilbert space $H$ and $f, g \in I[a, b]$. Then the following holds:
(i) $\left\langle\left(\int_{a}^{b} f(\lambda) \mathrm{d} E_{\lambda}\right) x, y\right\rangle=\int_{a}^{b} f(\lambda) \mathrm{d}\left\langle E_{\lambda} x, y\right\rangle, \quad x, y \in H$.
(ii) $E_{\mu} \int_{a}^{b} f(\lambda) \mathrm{d} E_{\lambda}=\int_{a}^{\mu} f(\lambda) \mathrm{d} E_{\lambda}, \quad a \leq \mu \leq b$.
(iii) $\left(\int_{a}^{b} f(\lambda) \mathrm{d} E_{\lambda}\right)\left(\int_{a}^{b} g(\lambda) \mathrm{d} E_{\lambda}\right)=\left(\int_{a}^{b}(f g)(\lambda) \mathrm{d} E_{\lambda}\right)$
(iv) $\left(\int_{a}^{b} f(\lambda) \mathrm{d} E_{\lambda}\right)^{*}=\int_{a}^{b} \bar{f}(\lambda) \mathrm{d} E_{\lambda}$.
(v) $\left\|\int_{a}^{b} f(\lambda) \mathrm{d} E_{\lambda} x\right\|^{2}=\int_{a}^{b} \int_{a}^{b}|f(\lambda)|^{2} \mathrm{~d}\left\langle E_{\lambda} x, x\right\rangle$.

Proof.
Corollary 2.21. Let $\left(E_{\lambda}\right)_{\lambda \in \mathbb{R}}$ be a spectral resolution on a Hilbert space $H$ and $[a, b] \subseteq \mathbb{R}$. Then

$$
T:=\int_{a}^{b} \lambda \mathrm{~d} E_{\lambda}
$$

is a bounded selfadjoint linear operator with bound $\|A\|=\max \{|a|,|b|\}$.

Existence: Choose $x_{0} \in \mathcal{D}(S)$ and $y \in \operatorname{rg}(S+\mathrm{i})^{\perp}=\operatorname{ker}\left(S^{*}+\mathrm{i}\right) \subseteq \mathcal{D}\left(S^{*}\right)$ such that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(S^{*}+\mathrm{i}\right) x & =(S+\mathrm{i}) x_{0}+y=(S+\mathrm{i}) x_{0}+\frac{1}{2 \mathrm{i}}\left(S^{*}+\mathrm{i}\right) y+\frac{1}{2 \mathrm{i}}\left(S^{*}-\mathrm{i}\right) y \\
& =(S+\mathrm{i}) x_{0}+\frac{1}{2 \mathrm{i}}\left(S^{*}+\mathrm{i}\right) y .
\end{aligned}
$$

Define $x_{+}=\frac{1}{2 i} y \in \operatorname{rg}(S+1)^{\perp}$ and $x_{-}=x-x_{0}-\frac{1}{2 i} y \in \operatorname{ker}\left(S^{*}+1\right)=\operatorname{rg}(S-1)^{\perp}$.
Uniqueness: It suffices to show that $x_{0}-x_{+}-x_{-}=0$ with $x_{0} \in \mathcal{D}(S)$ and $x_{ \pm} \in N_{+}$ only if $x_{0}=x_{ \pm}=0$. By assumption

$$
0=S^{*}\left(x_{0}-x_{+}-x_{-}\right)=S x_{0}-S^{*} x_{+}-S^{*} x_{-}=S x_{0}-\mathrm{i} x_{+}+\mathrm{i} x_{-} .
$$

### 3.1 Selfadjoint extensions of symmetric operators

Example 3.1. Let $H=L_{2}(0,1)$. We define $T$ by

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{D}(T) & :=\left\{f \in L_{2}(0,1): f \text { abs. cont, } f^{\prime} \in L_{2}(0,1), f(0)=f(1)=0\right\}, \\
T f & :=\mathrm{i} f^{\prime} .
\end{aligned}
$$

$T$ is a closed symmetric operator and $\mathcal{D}\left(T^{*}\right)=H^{1}(0,1)$ with $T^{*} f=\mathrm{i} f^{\prime}$.
Does $T$ have selfadjoint extensions?
Recall that the Cayley transform gives a relation between closed symmetric operators and closed isometric operators, more precisely

$$
T \text { selfadjoint } \quad \Longleftrightarrow \quad U_{T}:=(T-\mathrm{i})(T+\mathrm{i})^{-1} \text { unitary }
$$

$$
T \text { closed and symmetric } \Longleftrightarrow U_{T}:=(T-\mathrm{i})(T+\mathrm{i})^{-1} \text { closed and symmetric }
$$

$$
\left.U \text { closed and isometric, } \begin{array}{r}
\operatorname{rg}(U-1) \\
\operatorname{ran}
\end{array}\right\} \quad \Longrightarrow \quad\left\{\begin{array}{l}
U \text { is the Cayley transform of } \\
T=-\mathrm{i}(U+1)(U-1)^{-1} \\
\text { and } T \text { is closed and symmetric. }
\end{array}\right.
$$

So instead of looking for symmetric or selfadjoint extensions of $T$ we try to find isometric or unitary extensions of its Cayley transform. The advantage is that the domain on the range of the Cayley transform are closed subspaces.

Theorem 3.2 (1st Formula of von Neumann). Let $H$ be a complex Hilbert space and $S$ a closed symmetric linear operator on $H$ with Cayley transform $U$. We define the subspaces

$$
\begin{aligned}
& N_{+}:=\operatorname{rg}(S+\mathrm{i})^{\perp}=\operatorname{ker}\left(S^{*}-\mathrm{i}\right)=\mathcal{D}(U)^{\perp}, \\
& N_{-}:=\operatorname{rg}(S-\mathrm{i})^{\perp}=\operatorname{ker}\left(S^{*}+\mathrm{i}\right)=\operatorname{rg}(U)^{\perp} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Then $\mathcal{D}\left(S^{*}\right)=\mathcal{D}(S) \dot{+} N_{+} \dot{+} N_{-}$, where $\dot{+}$ denotes the direct sum.
Proof. Let $x \in \mathcal{D}\left(S^{*}\right)$. We have to show that there exist unique elements $x_{0} \in \mathcal{D}(S)$ and $x_{ \pm} \in N_{ \pm}$such that $x=x_{0}+x_{+} x_{-}$.

Hence

$$
\left.\begin{array}{rl}
x_{0} & =x_{-}+x_{+} \\
S x_{0} & =\mathrm{i} x_{+}-\mathrm{i} x_{-}
\end{array}\right\} \quad \Longrightarrow \quad(S+\mathrm{i}) x_{0}=\mathrm{i} x_{+}-\mathrm{i} x_{-}+\mathrm{i} x_{-}+\mathrm{i} x_{+}=2 \mathrm{i} x_{+} .
$$

Hence $x_{+} \in \operatorname{rg}(S+\mathrm{i}) \cap \operatorname{rg}(S+\mathrm{i})^{\perp}=\{0\}$. Similarly it follows that $x_{-}=0$. Then also $x_{0}=x_{+}+x_{-}=0$.

Definition 3.3. Let $S$ be a linear operator on a Banach space $X$. For $z \in \mathbb{C}$ we define the deficiency number $n(S, z):=\operatorname{dim}\left(\operatorname{rg}(S-z)^{\perp}\right)$. For symmetric operators $S$ we set
$n_{+}(S):=n(S,-\mathrm{i})=\operatorname{dim} \operatorname{rg}(S+\mathrm{i})^{\perp}, n_{-}(S) \quad:=n(S, \mathrm{i})=\operatorname{dim} \operatorname{rg}(S-\mathrm{i})^{\perp}$,
Definition 3.4. Let $S$ be a symmetric linear operator on a Banach space $X$ and $T$ a symmetric extension of $S . T$ is called an

$$
\begin{aligned}
m \text {-dimensional extension of } S & \Longleftrightarrow \quad \operatorname{dim} \mathcal{D}(T) / \mathcal{D}(S)=m, \\
m \text {-dimensional restriction of } S^{*} & \Longleftrightarrow \quad \operatorname{dim} \mathcal{D}\left(S^{*}\right) / \mathcal{D}(T)=m \text {. }
\end{aligned}
$$

Theorem 3.5. Let $H$ be a complex Hilbert space and $S$ a closed symmetric linear operator on $H$ with Cayley transform $U$. Then $S$ has symmetric extensions if $n_{+}(S)>0$ and $n_{-}(S)>0$. Every m-dimensional symmetric extension $T$ of $S$ has deficiency indices $n_{ \pm}(T)=n_{ \pm}(S)-m$. $T$ is then of the form

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{D}(T) & =\mathcal{D}(S)+\left\{y+\widetilde{V} y: y \in \widetilde{N}_{+}\right\}, \\
T(x+y+\widetilde{V} y) & =S x+\mathrm{i} y-\mathrm{i} \widetilde{V} y \quad \text { for } x \in \mathcal{D}(S), y \in \widetilde{N}_{+},
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\widetilde{N}_{+}$is an m-dimensional subspace of $N_{+}$and $\widetilde{V}: \widetilde{N}_{+} \rightarrow N_{-}$is an isometry.

If $n_{ \pm}(S)<\infty$, then $S$ has selfadjoint extensions if and only if $n_{+}(S)=n_{-}(S)$.
Proof. Let $U_{S}$ be the Cayley transform of $S$. Observe that
$T$ symmetric extension of $S \quad \Longleftrightarrow \quad U_{T}$ isometric extension of $U_{S}$
$T$ selfadjoint extension of $S \quad \Longleftrightarrow \quad U_{T}$ unitary extension of $U_{S}$.
First we show: if there exists a $p \in \mathbb{N}$ with $p \leq \min \left\{n_{+}(S), n_{-}(S)\right\}$, then $S$ has a $p$-dimensional extension of the form described above. By assumption, we can choose $p$-dimensional subspaces $\widetilde{N}_{ \pm}$of $N_{ \pm}$and a unitary operator $\widetilde{V}: \widetilde{N}_{+} \rightarrow N_{-}$. Now we define an extension $U_{T}$ of $U_{S}$ by

$$
\begin{aligned}
& U_{T}: \mathcal{D}\left(U_{S}\right) \oplus \widetilde{N}_{+} \rightarrow \operatorname{rg}\left(U_{S}\right) \oplus \widetilde{N}_{-}, \\
& U_{T}(x+y)=U_{S}(x)-\widetilde{V} y \quad \text { for } x \in \mathcal{D}\left(U_{S}\right) \text { and } y \in \widetilde{N}_{+} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Then $U_{T}$ is closed isometry and $\overline{\operatorname{rg}\left(U_{T}-\mathrm{id}\right)} \subseteq \overline{\operatorname{rg}\left(U_{S}-\mathrm{id}\right)}=H$, so it is the closure of the symmetric closed operator $T=\mathrm{i}\left(\mathrm{id}+U_{T}\right)\left(!-U_{T}\right)^{-1}$. Its domain is given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{D}(T) & =\operatorname{rg}\left(\mathrm{id}-U_{T}\right)=\left(\mathrm{id}-U_{T}\right)\left(\operatorname{rg}(S+\mathrm{i}) \oplus \widetilde{N}_{+}\right) \\
& =\left(\operatorname{id}-U_{T}\right)(\operatorname{rg}(S+\mathrm{i})) \dot{+}\left(\mathrm{id}-U_{T}\right) \widetilde{N}_{+}=\mathcal{D}(S) \dot{+}(\mathrm{id}+\widetilde{V}) \widetilde{N}_{+} \\
& =\left\{x \in H: x=x_{0}+y+\widetilde{V} y \text { with } x_{0}=\in \mathcal{D}(S), y \in \widetilde{N}_{+}\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

This implies that $\mathcal{D}(T) / \mathcal{D}(S)=\operatorname{dim}(\mathrm{id}+\widetilde{V}) \widetilde{N}_{+}=p$ and
$T\left(x_{0}+y+\widetilde{V} y\right)=S\left(x_{0}\right)+T(y+\widetilde{V} y)=S\left(x_{0}\right)+\mathrm{i}\left(U_{T}+\mathrm{id}\right)\left(\mathrm{id}-U_{T}\right)^{-1} \underbrace{(\mathrm{id}+\widetilde{V}) y}_{=(\mathrm{id}-U) T) y}$

$$
=S\left(x_{0}\right)+\mathrm{i}\left(U_{T}+\mathrm{id}\right) y=S\left(x_{0}\right)+y-\mathrm{i} \widetilde{V} y .
$$

Now assume that $T$ is a symmetric extension of $S$. Then $U_{T}$ is a isometric extension of $U_{S}$. Note that $\mathcal{D}\left(U_{S}\right), \mathcal{D}\left(U_{T}\right), \operatorname{rg}\left(U_{S}\right)$ and $\mathcal{D}\left(U_{T}\right)$ are closed, hence there exist a closed subspace $\tilde{N}_{ \pm}$such that $\mathcal{D}\left(U_{T}\right)=\mathcal{D}\left(U_{S}\right) \oplus \widetilde{N}_{+}, \operatorname{rg}\left(U_{T}\right)=\operatorname{rg}\left(U_{S}\right) \oplus \widetilde{N}_{-}$. Moreover, the restriction

$$
\left.U_{T}\right|_{\tilde{N}_{+}}: \tilde{N}_{+} \rightarrow \tilde{N}_{-}
$$

is well-defined and isometric.
In particular, if $T$ is a selfadjoint extension of $S$, then $U_{T}$ is a unitary extension of $U_{S}$. Hence $U_{T}$ maps $\mathcal{D}\left(U_{T}\right) \ominus \mathcal{D}\left(U_{S}\right)=\mathcal{D}\left(U_{S}\right)^{\perp}$ unitarily to $\operatorname{rg}\left(U_{T}\right) \ominus \operatorname{rg}\left(U_{S}\right)=$ $\operatorname{rg}\left(U_{S}\right)^{\perp}$. Consequently, $n_{+}(S)=\operatorname{dim} \mathcal{D}\left(U_{S}\right)^{\perp}=\operatorname{dimrg}\left(U_{S}\right)^{\perp}=n_{-}(S)$.
Theorem 3.6. Let $H$ be a complex Hilbert space and $S$ a closed symmetric linear operator on $H$ with $n_{+}(S)=n_{-}(S)=m<\infty$. Let $T$ a linear operator on $H$. Then (i) $T$ is a selfadjoint extension of $S \quad \Longleftrightarrow T$ is an m-dimensional symmetric extension of $S$.
(ii) $T$ is a selfadjoint restriction of $S^{*} \quad \Longleftrightarrow \quad T$ is an $m$-dimensional symmetric restriction of $S^{*}$.

Proof. (i) If $T$ is a selfadjoint extension of $S$, then $U_{T}$ is a unitary extension of $U_{S}$ and

$$
\mathcal{D}(T)=\operatorname{rg}\left(\mathrm{id}-U_{T}\right)=\left(\mathrm{id}-U_{T}\right)\left(\operatorname{rg}(S+\mathrm{i}) \oplus N_{+}\right)=\mathcal{D}(S) \dot{+}\left(\mathrm{id}-U_{T}\right) N_{+}
$$

Since id $-U_{T}$ is injective, it follows that $\operatorname{dim}\left(\left(\operatorname{id}-U_{T}\right) N_{+}\right)=\operatorname{dim} N_{+}=m$.

On the other hand, if $T$ is an $m$-dimensional extension of $S$, then $\mathcal{D}(T)=\mathcal{D}(S) \dot{+} \mathcal{D}$ for some $m$-dimensional subspace $\mathcal{D}$ of $H$.
From $\operatorname{dim}(H / \operatorname{rg}(S \pm \mathrm{i}))=\operatorname{dim}((T \pm \mathrm{i}) \mathcal{D})=m$ we obtain

$$
\operatorname{rg}(T \pm \mathrm{i})=(T \pm \mathrm{i})(\mathcal{D}(S) \dot{+} \mathcal{D})=\operatorname{rg}(S \pm \mathrm{i}) \dot{+}(T \pm \mathrm{i}) \mathcal{D}=H .
$$

(ii) Observe that $\operatorname{dim} S / S^{*}=2 m$. By assumption $S \subseteq T \subseteq S^{*}$, so $T$ is an $m$-dimensional restriction of $S^{*}$ if and only if it is an $m$-dimensional extension of $S$.
Let us go back to the example of the beginning of the section.
Example. Let $H=L_{2}(0,1)$. We define $T$ by

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{D}(T) & :=\left\{f \in L_{2}(0,1): f \text { abs. cont, } f^{\prime} \in L_{2}(0,1), f(0)=f(1)=0\right\}, \\
T f & :=\mathrm{i} f^{\prime} .
\end{aligned}
$$

$T$ is a closed symmetric operator and $\mathcal{D}\left(T^{*}\right)=H^{1}(0,1)$ with $T^{*} f=\mathrm{i} f^{\prime}$.
In order to determine if $T$ has selfadjoint extensions, it suffices to calculate $n_{ \pm}(T)=$ dim $\operatorname{ker}\left(T^{*} \pm \mathrm{i}\right)$. It is easy to see that

$$
\operatorname{ker}\left(T^{*}+\mathrm{i}\right)=\operatorname{span}\left\{\varphi_{+}\right\}, \quad \operatorname{ker}\left(T^{*}-\mathrm{i}\right)=\operatorname{span}\left\{\varphi_{-}\right\},
$$

where $\varphi_{ \pm}(t)=\exp \pm t$. Hence $n_{+}(T)=n_{-}(T)=1$, so $T$ admits selfadjoint extensions.
To find all selfadjoint extensions of $T$, we have to find all unitary maps $\operatorname{ker}\left(T^{*}+\mathrm{i}\right) \rightarrow$ $\operatorname{ker}\left(T^{*}-\mathrm{i}\right)$. Obviously they are given by
$U_{\vartheta}: \operatorname{ker}\left(T^{*}+\mathrm{i}\right) \rightarrow \operatorname{ker}\left(T^{*}-\mathrm{i}\right), \quad U_{\vartheta} \varphi_{+}=\left(\frac{\mathrm{e}^{2}-1}{1-\mathrm{e}-2}\right) \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \vartheta} \varphi_{-}$
for arbitrary $\vartheta \in \mathbb{R}$. We conclude that every selfadjoint extension of $T$ is of the form

$$
\begin{gathered}
\mathcal{D}\left(\widetilde{T}_{\vartheta}\right)=\mathcal{D}(T)+\operatorname{span}\left\{\varphi_{+}+\left(\frac{\mathrm{e}^{2}-1}{1-\mathrm{e}^{-2}}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}} \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \vartheta} \varphi_{-}\right\}, \\
\widetilde{T}_{\vartheta}\left(f_{0}+\alpha\left(\varphi_{+}+\left(\frac{\mathrm{e}^{2}-1}{1-\mathrm{e}^{-2}}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}} \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \vartheta} \varphi_{-}\right)\right)=f_{0}^{\prime}+\mathrm{i} \alpha \varphi_{+}-\mathrm{i} \alpha\left(\frac{\mathrm{e}^{2}-1}{1-\mathrm{e}^{-2}}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}} \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \vartheta} \varphi_{-} .
\end{gathered}
$$

### 3.2 Deficiency indices and points of regular type

Recall that for a closed linear operator $S$ and $z \in \mathbb{C}$ we defined $n(S, z):=\operatorname{dim} \operatorname{rg}(S-$ $z)^{\perp}$.

Definition 3.7. Let $H$ be a Hilbert space and $S$ a linear operator on $H$. A point $z \in \mathbb{C}$ is called a point of regular type of $S$ if

$$
\exists c_{z}>0 \text { such that }\|(z-S)\| \geq c_{z}\|x\| \text { for all } x \in \mathcal{D}(S)
$$

The set

$$
\Gamma(S):=\{z \text { is of regular type of } S\}
$$

is the regularity domain on $S$.
In the case when $S$ is closed, the following is easy to see:

- $\rho(S) \subseteq \Gamma(S)$,
- $z \in \rho(S) \Longleftrightarrow S-z$ is injective and $\operatorname{rg}(z-S)$ is closed.

Proposition 3.8. Let $S$ be a linear operator on a Hilbert space H. Then
(i) $\Gamma(S)$ is open.
(ii) $S$ is symmetric $\Longrightarrow \mathbb{C} \backslash \mathbb{R} \subseteq \Gamma(S)$.
(iii) $S$ is isometric $\quad \Longrightarrow \mathbb{C} \backslash\{|z|=1\} \subseteq \Gamma(S)$.

Proof. (i) Fix $z_{0} \in \Gamma(S)$. Then also the open ball with radius $c_{z_{0}}$ centred in $z_{0}$ lies in $\Gamma(S)$ because for $z \in \mathbb{C}$ with $\left|z-z_{0}\right|<c_{z_{0}}$

$$
\|(S-z) x\| \geq\left\|\left(S-z_{0}\right) x\right\|-\left|z-z_{0}\right|\|x\| \geq \underbrace{\left(c_{z_{0}}-\left|z-z_{0}\right|\right.}_{>0})\|x\| .
$$

(ii) For every $z \in \mathbb{C} \backslash \mathbb{R}$ the map $(z-S)^{-1}: \operatorname{rg}(z-S) \rightarrow \mathcal{D}(S)$ exists and is bounded by $|\operatorname{Im} z|^{-1}$. By the closed graph theorem $\operatorname{rg}(z-S)$ is closed, so $z \in \Gamma(S)$.
(iii) Let $z \in \mathbb{C}$ with $|z| \neq 1$. Then, for all $x \in \mathcal{D}(S)$,

$$
\|(S-z) x\| \geq|\|S x\|-|z|\|x\||=\underbrace{|1-| z\| \|}_{>0}\|x\| .
$$

Theorem 3.9. Let $S$ be a closable linear operator on a complex Hilbert space $H$. The following holds.
(i) The deficiency numbers $n(S, z)$ are locally constant in $\Gamma(S)$. In particular they are constant in connected components of $\Gamma(S)$.
(ii) If $S$ is symmetric, then $n(S, z)$ is constant in the upper and in the lower half plane (but in general $n(S, \mathrm{i}) \neq n(S,-\mathrm{i})$ ).
(iii) If $S$ is isometric, then $n(S, z)$ is constant inside and outside of the unit circle (but in general $n(S, 0) \neq n(S, 2)$ ).

Proof. (ii) and (iii) follow immediately form (i) and Proposition 3.8. So we only have to show (i).

Case 1. $S$ is closed. Let $z_{0} \in \Gamma(S)$. Since $S$ is closed, $\operatorname{rg}\left(z_{0}-S\right)$ is closed. We will show that $n\left(S, z_{0}\right)=n(S, z)$ for all $z$ with $\left|z-z_{0}\right|<\frac{c z_{0}}{2}$.
Recall that for closed subspaces $U, V$ of $H$ with $U \cap V^{\perp}=\{0\}, \operatorname{dim} U \leq \operatorname{dim} V$. In particular, if $V \cap U^{\perp}+U \cap V^{\perp}=\{0\}$, then $\operatorname{dim} U=\operatorname{dim} V$. We will apply this to $U=\operatorname{rg}\left(z_{0}-S\right)^{\perp}$ and $V=\operatorname{rg}(z-S)^{\perp}$. So we only have to show

$$
\operatorname{rg}\left(z_{0}-S\right)^{\perp} \cap \operatorname{rg}(z-S)=\operatorname{rg}(z-S)^{\perp} \cap \operatorname{rg}\left(z_{0}-S\right)=\{0\}
$$

for all $z$ with $\left|z-z_{0}\right|<\frac{c_{z_{0}}}{2}$. Recall that by the proof of Proposition 3.8, $z \in \Gamma(S)$ and $c_{z} \geq\left|c_{z_{0}}-\left|z-z_{0}\right|\right| \stackrel{2}{=} \frac{c_{z_{0}}}{2}$.
Assume $\operatorname{rg}(z-S)^{\perp} \cap \operatorname{rg}\left(z_{0}-S\right) \neq\{0\}$. Then there exists an $x \in \mathcal{D}(S) \backslash\{0\}$ such that $\left(z_{0}-S\right) x \perp \operatorname{rg}(z-S)$. Using that $(z-S) x \perp\left(z_{0}-S\right) x$ we obtain the contradiction
$\left.\|(z-S) x\| \leq\left(\|(S-z) x\|^{2}+\| S-z_{0}\right) x \|^{2}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}=\|(S-z) x\|+\left\|\left(S-z_{0}\right) x\right\|$

$$
=\left\|\left(z_{0}-z\right) x\right\| \leq \frac{\left|z_{0}-z\right|}{c_{z}}\|(S-z) x\|<\frac{c_{z_{0}}}{2} \frac{1}{c_{z_{0}}}\|(S-z) x\|=\|(S-z) x\| .
$$

Now assume $\operatorname{rg}\left(z_{0}-S\right)^{\perp} \cap \operatorname{rg}(z-S) \neq\{0\}$. Then there exists an $x \in \mathcal{D}(S) \backslash\{0\}$ such that $(z-S) x \perp \operatorname{rg}\left(z_{0}-S\right)$. Using that $(z-S) x \perp\left(z_{0}-S\right) x$ we obtain the contradiction

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|\left(z_{0}-S\right) x\right\| & \left.\leq\left(\|(S-z) x\|^{2}+\| S-z_{0}\right) x \|^{2}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}=\|(S-z) x\|+\left\|\left(S-z_{0}\right) x\right\| \\
& =\left\|\left(z_{0}-z\right) x\right\| \leq \frac{\left|z_{0}-z\right|}{c_{z_{0}}}\|(S-z) x\|<\frac{c_{z_{0}}}{2} \frac{1}{c_{z}}\|(S-z) x\|=\frac{1}{2}\|(S-z) x\| .
\end{aligned}
$$

Case 2. $S$ is closable. Let $\bar{S}$ be the closure of $S$. By case 1, it suffices to show that $\Gamma(S)=\Gamma(\bar{S})$ and that $n(S, z)=n(\bar{S}, z)$ for all $z \in \Gamma(S)$. The inclusion $\Gamma(\bar{S}) \subseteq \Gamma(S)$ is obvious. If $z \in \Gamma(S)$ and $x \in \mathcal{D}(S)$, then there exists a sequence $\left(x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ such that $x_{n} \rightarrow x$ and $S x_{n} \rightarrow \bar{S} x$. Hence

$$
\|(z-\bar{S}) x\|=\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left\|(z-\bar{S}) x_{n}\right\| \geq c_{z} \lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left\|x_{n}\right\|=c_{z}\|x\|
$$

showing that $\Gamma(S)=\Gamma(\bar{S})$. Moreover, $\operatorname{rg}(\underline{z}-S)^{\perp}=\operatorname{rg}(z-\bar{S})^{\perp}$ because $\operatorname{rg}(z-S)$ is dense in $\operatorname{rg}\left(z_{0}-S\right)$. Hence $n(S, z)=n(\bar{S}, z)$ for all $z \in \Gamma(S)=\Gamma(\bar{S})$.
Corollary 3.10. Let $S$ be a symmetric operator on a complex Hilbert space $H$. The following holds.
(i) $S$ is essentially selfadjoint $\Longleftrightarrow \quad n_{+}(S)=n_{-}(S)=0$.
(ii) $S$ is selfadjoint $\Longleftrightarrow S$ is closed and $n_{+}(S)=n_{-}(S)=0$.

Proof. This follows immediately from the fact that a symmetric operator $S$ is es sentially selfadjoint if and only if $\operatorname{rg}(S \pm \mathrm{i})$ is dense in $H$.

Corollary 3.11. For a $S$ closed symmetric operator on a complex Hilbert space $H$ the following holds.
(i) $S$ has real points of regular type $\quad \Longrightarrow \quad S$ has a selfadjoint extension.
(ii) $S$ is semibounded $\quad \Longleftrightarrow \quad S$ has a selfadjoint extension.

Proof. (i) By assumption and Proposition 3.8 (i), $\Gamma(S)$ is connected, hence $n(S$, i) $=$ $n(S,-$ i) by Theorem 3.9. Therefore $S$ has selfadjoint extensions by Theorem 3.5.
(ii) Without restriction we assume that $S$ is semibounded from below. Then there exists a $\gamma \in \mathbb{R}$ such that $\langle S x, x\rangle \geq \gamma$ for all $x \in \mathcal{D}(S)$. For all $\lambda<\gamma$ we obtain

$$
\|(\lambda-S) x\|\|x\| \geq\langle(\lambda-S) x, x\rangle \geq(\lambda-\gamma)\|x\|^{2}
$$

Hence $(\infty, \gamma) \subseteq \Gamma(S)$ and the assertion follows from (i).
Theorem 3.12. Let $S$ be a symmetric operator on a complex Hilbert space $H$ with defect indices $n_{+}(S)=n_{-}(S)=m<\infty$. Let $T_{1}$ and $T_{2}$ be selfadjoint extensions of $S$ with spectral resolutions $E_{1}$ and $E_{2}$. Let $I \subseteq \mathbb{R}$ be an open or closed interval and $k_{j}:=\operatorname{dim} \operatorname{rg}\left(E_{j}(I)\right)$ for $j=1,2$.
If $k_{1}<\infty$, then $k_{2}<\infty$ and $\left|k_{1}-k_{2}\right|<\infty$.
Proof. Assume that $I=(\alpha, \beta)$ with $-\infty<\beta<\alpha<\infty$. Note that $\operatorname{rg}\left(E_{j}(I)\right) \subseteq$
 $\mathcal{D}\left(T_{j}\right)$
Then

$$
\operatorname{dim}\left(\operatorname{rg}\left(E_{2}(I)\right) \cap \mathcal{D}(\bar{S})\right) \geq k_{2}-m>k_{1}
$$

and for every $x \in\left(\operatorname{rg}\left(E_{2}(I)\right) \cap \mathcal{D}(\bar{S})\right) \backslash\{0\}$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|\left(T_{1}-\frac{\alpha+\beta}{2}\right) x\right\|^{2} & =\left\|\left(T_{2}-\frac{\alpha+\beta}{2}\right) x\right\|^{2} \\
& =\int_{(\alpha, \beta)}\left(t-\frac{\alpha+\beta}{2}\right)^{2} \mathrm{~d}\langle E(t) x, x\rangle<\left(\frac{\beta-\alpha}{2}\right)^{2}\|x\|^{2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

So, for all $x \in\left(\operatorname{rg}\left(E_{2}(I)\right) \cap \mathcal{D}(\bar{S})\right) \backslash\{0\}$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\left(T_{1}-\frac{\alpha+\beta}{2}\right) x\right\|<\frac{\beta-\alpha}{2}\|x\| \tag{3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

By (3.1) there exists an $x \in \operatorname{rg}\left(E_{2}(I)\right) \cap \mathcal{D}(\bar{S})$ with $\|x\|-1$ and $x \perp \operatorname{rg}\left(E_{1}(I)\right.$. For this $x$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\left(T_{1}-\frac{\alpha+\beta}{2}\right) x\right\|^{2}=\int_{\mathbb{R} \backslash(\alpha, \beta)}\left(t-\frac{\alpha+\beta}{2}\right)^{2} \mathrm{~d}\langle E(t) x, x\rangle \geq \frac{\beta-\alpha}{2}\|x\| \tag{3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

in contradiction to (3.3). This proves $k_{2} \leq k_{1}+m<\infty$. Applying the same to reasoning to $k_{2}$, we find $k_{1} \leq k_{2}+m$, so $\left|k_{1}-k_{2}\right| \leq m$

If $I$ is a closed interval of the form $[\alpha, \beta]$ with $-\infty<\beta \leq \alpha<\infty$, then we have to change " $<$ " to " $\leq$ " in (3.2) and " $\geq$ " to " $>$ " in (3.3).

Theorem 3.13. Let $S$ be a symmetric operator on a complex Hilbert space $H$ with defect indices $n_{+}(S)=n_{-}(S)=m<\infty$. Let $T_{1}$ and $T_{2}$ be selfadjoint extensions of $S$ with spectral resolutions $E_{1}$ and $E_{2}$.
(i) For every $z \in \rho\left(T_{1}\right) \cap \rho\left(T_{2}\right)$ the range of the operator $\left(T_{1}-z\right)^{-1}-\left(T_{2}-z\right)^{-1}$ is at most m-dimensional.
(ii) $\sigma_{\text {ess }}\left(T_{1}\right)=\sigma_{\text {ess }}\left(T_{2}\right)$.

Let $I \subseteq \mathbb{R}$ be an open or closed interval and $k_{j}:=\operatorname{dim} \operatorname{rg}\left(E_{j}(I)\right)$ for $j=1,2$.

$$
\text { If } k_{1}<\infty \text {, then } k_{2}<\infty \text { and }\left|k_{1}-k_{2}\right|<\infty .
$$

Proof. (i) Observe that every $z \in \rho\left(T_{j}\right)$ belongs to $\Gamma(S)$, hence $\operatorname{dim}(\operatorname{rg}(S-z))^{\perp}=$ $m<\infty$. Let $P$ be the orthogonal projection on $(\operatorname{rg}(S-z))^{\perp}$. Then for all $x \in H$ and all $z \in \rho\left(T_{1}\right) \cap \rho\left(T_{2}\right)$

$$
\begin{array}{rl}
\left(T_{1}-z\right)^{-1} & x-\left(T_{2}-z\right)^{-1} x \\
& =\left(\left(T_{1}-z\right)^{-1}-\left(T_{2}-z\right)^{-1}\right)(1-P) x+\left(\left(T_{1}-z\right)^{-1}-\left(T_{2}-z\right)^{-1} P x\right. \\
& =\left((\bar{S}-z)^{-1}-(\bar{S}-z)^{-1}\right)(1-P) x+\left(\left(T_{1}-z\right)^{-1}-\left(T_{2}-z\right)^{-1}\right) P x \\
& =\left(\left(T_{1}-z\right)^{-1}-\left(T_{2}-z\right)^{-1}\right) P x
\end{array}
$$

So we showed that $\left(T_{1}-z\right)^{-1}-\left(T_{2}-z\right)^{-1}=\left(\left(T_{1}-z\right)^{-1}-\left(T_{2}-z\right)^{-1}\right)$ which implies that $\operatorname{dim} \operatorname{rg}\left(\left(T_{1}-z\right)^{-1}-\left(T_{2}-z\right)^{-1}\right) \leq \operatorname{dim} \operatorname{rg} P$.
the range of the operator $\left(T_{1}-z\right)^{-1}-\left(T_{2}-z\right)^{-1}$ is at most $m$-dimensional.
(ii) Let $\lambda \in \mathbb{C} \backslash \sigma_{\text {ess }}\left(T_{1}\right)$. Then there exists $\varepsilon>0$ such that $\operatorname{dim} \operatorname{rg}\left(E_{1}(\lambda-\varepsilon, \lambda+\varepsilon)\right)<$ $\infty$. Using theorem 3.12 it follows that $\operatorname{dim} \operatorname{rg}\left(E_{2}(\lambda-\varepsilon, \lambda+\varepsilon)\right)<\infty$, implying that $\lambda \notin \sigma_{\text {ess }}\left(T_{2}\right)$.
Alternative proof: Since $T_{1}$ and $T_{2}$ are selfadjoint, $\mathrm{i} \in \rho\left(T_{1}\right) \cap \rho\left(T_{2}\right)$. The operator $\left(T_{1}-\mathrm{i}\right)^{-1}-\left(T_{2}-\mathrm{i}\right)^{-1}$ is bounded and is compact because it finite-dimensional range by (i). Hence, by Exercise 7.1, $\sigma_{\text {ess }}\left(T_{1}\right)=\sigma_{\text {ess }}\left(T_{2}\right)$.

Corollary 3.14. With the assumptions and notation as in Theorem 3.13, it follows that if $\sigma\left(T_{1}\right) \cap(a, b)$ consists only of discrete eigenvalues with total multiplicity $k_{1}$, then $\sigma\left(T_{2}\right) \cap(a, b)$ consists only of discrete eigenvalues with total multiplicity $k_{2} \leq k_{1}+m$.

Theorem 3.15. Let $S$ be a symmetric operator on a complex Hilbert space $H$ with defect indices $n_{+}(S)=n_{-}(S)=m<\infty$. Let $\lambda \in \mathbb{C}$ and assume that there exists $c>0$ such that

$$
\|(S-\lambda) x\| \geq c\|x\|, \quad x \in \mathcal{D}(S)
$$

Then for every selfadjoint extension $T$ of $S$ the set $\sigma(T) \cap(\lambda-c, \lambda+c)$ consists of isolated eigenvalues with total multiplicity $\leq m$.

Proof. Let $E$ be the spectral resolution of $T$. We have to show that

$$
\operatorname{dim}(E(\lambda-c, \lambda+c))=\operatorname{dim}(E(\lambda-c-, \lambda+c)) \leq m
$$

Assume that this is not true. Since $\operatorname{dim}(\mathcal{D}(T) / \mathcal{D}(\bar{S}))=m$ and $\operatorname{rg}(E(\lambda-c-, \lambda+$ $c)) \subseteq \mathcal{D}(T)$, there exists an $x_{0}$ in $\operatorname{rg}(E(\lambda-c-, \lambda+c))$ with $x_{0} \neq 0$. We obtain the contradiction

$$
\begin{align*}
c\left\|x_{0}\right\| & \leq\left\|\left(S-\lambda_{0}\right) x_{0}\right\|=\left\|\left(T-\lambda_{0}\right) x_{0}\right\|=\left(\int_{|t-\lambda|<c}\left|t-\lambda_{0}\right|^{2} \mathrm{~d}\left\langle E_{t} x_{0}, x_{0}\right\rangle\right)^{\frac{1}{2}} \\
& <c\left\|x_{0}\right\| .
\end{align*}
$$

Corollary 3.16. Let $S$ be a semibounded symmetric operator on a complex Hilbert space $H$ with defect indices $n_{+}(S)=n_{-}(S)=m<\infty$. Without restriction we assume that $S \geq \gamma$ for some $\gamma \in \mathbb{R}$. Let $T$ be a selfadjoint extension $T$ of $S$. Then
(i) $\sigma(T) \cap(\infty, \gamma)$ consists of isolated eigenvalues of total multiplicity $\leq m$.
(ii) $T$ is semibounded from below.

Proof. (i): Let $\lambda<\gamma$ and $c:=\gamma-\lambda$. For all $x \in \mathcal{D}(S)$ we obtain
$\|(S-\lambda) x\| \geq\langle(S-\lambda) x, x\rangle=\langle(S-\gamma) x, x\rangle+(\gamma-\lambda)\|x\|^{2}>(\gamma-\lambda)\|x\|^{2}=c\|x\|^{2}$.
Hence, by Theorem 3.15, the set $\sigma(T) \cap(\lambda-c, \lambda+c)=\sigma(T) \cap(2 \lambda-\gamma, \gamma)$ consists only of isolated eigenvalues of total multiplicity $\leq m$. Since this is true for all $\lambda<\gamma$, the claim is proved.
(ii) is an immediate consequence of (i).

## Chapter 4

## Perturbation Theory

### 4.1 Closed operators

Definition 4.1. Let $X, Y, Z$ be normed spaces and $T(X \rightarrow Y), S(X \rightarrow Z)$ be linear operators. The operator $S$ is called $T$-bounded (or relatively bounded with respect to $T$ ) if and only if $\mathcal{D}(S) \supseteq \mathcal{D}(T)$ and there exist $a, b \geq 0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|S x\| \leq a\|x\|+b\|T x\| \text { for all } x \in \mathcal{D}(T) . \tag{4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

The infimum of all $b \geq 0$ such that (4.1) holds for some $a \geq 0$, is called the $T$-bound of $S$.

For example, if $S$ is bounded, it is $T$-bound with relative bound 0 .
Remark 4.2. Note that (4.1) is equivalent to the existence of $\alpha, \beta \geq 0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|S x\|^{2} \leq \alpha^{2}\|x\|^{2}+\beta^{2}\left\|T x^{2}\right\| \text { for all } x \in \mathcal{D}(T) \tag{4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

The infimum of all $\beta \geq 0$ such that (4.2) holds, is equal to the $T$-bound of $T$.
Next we will give a criterion for relative boundedness.
Theorem 4.3. Let $X, Y, Z$ be Banach spaces and $T(X \rightarrow Y), S(X \rightarrow Z)$ be linear operators with $\mathcal{D}(S) \supseteq \mathcal{D}(T)$. Assume that $T$ is closed and $S$ is closable. Then $S$ is $T$-bounded

Proof.
Theorem 4.4. Let $X, Y$ be Banach spaces and $T(X \rightarrow Y), S(X \rightarrow Y)$ be linear operators. If $S$ is $T$-bounded with relative bound $<1$, then the following holds:
(i) $T+S$ is closable if and only if $T$ is closable. In this case $\mathcal{D}(\overline{T+S})=\mathcal{D}(\bar{T})$.
(ii) $T+S$ is closed if and only if $T$ is closed.

Proof.
We call a sequence $\left(x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \in \subseteq \mathcal{D}(T) T$-bounded if both $\left(x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ and $\left(T x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ are bounded. The notion $T$-convergent is defined analogously

Definition 4.5. Let $X, Y, Z$ be normed spaces, and $T(X \rightarrow Y), S(X \rightarrow Z)$ be linear operators. The operator $S$ is called $T$-compact (or relatively compact with respect to $T$ ) if and only if $\mathcal{D}(S) \supseteq \mathcal{D}(T)$ and every $T$-bounded sequence $\left(x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ contains the sequence $\left(S x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ contains a convergent subsequence.
Proposition 4.6. If $S$ is $T$-compact, then $S$ is $T$-bounded.
Proof.
At the end of this section we will show that, under additional conditions, the $T$ bound of $S$ is 0 .

Theorem 4.7. Let $X, Y$ be Banach spaces and $T(X \rightarrow Y), S(X \rightarrow Y)$ be linear operators. Assume that $T$ is closable and that $S$ is $T$-compact. Then the following holds:
(i) $S$ is $T+S$-compact.
(ii) $T+S$ is closable.
(iii) $\mathcal{D}(\overline{T+S})=\mathcal{D}(\bar{T})$.
(iv) If $T$ is closed, then $T+S$ is closed.

Proof.
Now we will prove a stronger version of Proposition 4.6.
Theorem 4.8. Let $X, Y, Z$ be Banach spaces and $T(X \rightarrow Y), S(X \rightarrow Y)$ be linear operators. Assume that $S$ is $T$-compact and assume that in addition at least one of the following conditions hold:
(i) $S$ is closable.
(ii) $X$ and $Y$ are Hilbert spaces and $T$ is closable.

Then $S$ is $T$-bounded with relative bound 0
Proof.

### 4.2 Selfadjoint operators

Theorem 4.9. Let $H$ be a complex Hilbert space, $T(H \rightarrow H)$ a selfadjoint linear operator and $S(H \rightarrow H)$ with $\mathcal{D}(T) \subseteq \mathcal{D}(S)$. Then the following is equivalent.
(i) $S$ is T-bounded.
(ii) $c:=\limsup _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left\|S(T-\mathrm{i} \eta)^{-1}\right\|<\infty$

In this case, the liminf is a limit and the limit is equal to the $T$-bound of $S$. Proof.

Theorem 4.10 (Kato-Rellich). Let $H$ be a complex Hilbert space, $T(H \rightarrow H)$ a linear operator and $S(H \rightarrow H)$ a symmetric linear operator with $\mathcal{D}(T) \subseteq \mathcal{D}(S)$ Assume that $S$ has $T$-bound $<1$. Then the following holds:
(i) If $T$ is selfadjoint, then so is $T+S$
(ii) If $T$ is essentially selfadjoint, then so is $T+S$ and $\mathcal{D}(\overline{T+S})=\mathcal{D}(\bar{T})$.

Proof.

### 4.3 Stability of the essential spectrum

Theorem 4.11 (Weyl). Let $S, T$ be selfadjoint operators on a complex Hilbert space $H$ and assume that

$$
\begin{equation*}
(S-z)^{-1}-(T-z)^{-1} \tag{4.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

for some $z \in \rho(S) \cap \rho(T)$. Then $\sigma_{\text {ess }}(S)=\sigma_{\text {ess }}(T)$.
Note that (4.3) holds for one $z \in \rho(S) \cap \rho(T)$ if and only if it holds for all $z \in$ $\rho(S) \cap \rho(T)$.

## Proof.

As an immediate corollary we obtain
Corollary 4.12. Let $T$ be selfadjoint and $K$ compact and selfadjoint. Then $\sigma_{e s s}(T)=$ $\sigma_{\text {ess }}(T+K)$.

Proof. Note that by Theorem 4.7, $T+K$ is selfadjoint. Let $\lambda \in \rho(T) \cap \rho(T+K)$. For example, we can choose $\lambda=\mathrm{i}$. Then

$$
(T-\lambda)^{-1}-(T+K-\lambda)^{-1}=(T-\lambda)^{-1} K(T+K-\lambda)^{-1}
$$

is compact. Hence the assertion follows from Weyl's theorem (Theorem 4.11). $\square$
We have defined the essential spectrum only for selfadjoint operators. For a nonselfadjoint operator $T$ it can be defined as

$$
\sigma_{\text {ess }}(T)=\{\lambda \in \mathbb{C}: T-\lambda \text { is not semi-Fredholm }\}
$$

A linear operator $S$ is called semi-Fredholm if $\operatorname{rg}(\lambda-T)$ is closed and $\operatorname{dim}(\operatorname{ker}(\lambda-$ $T))<\infty$ or $\operatorname{codim}(\operatorname{rg}(\lambda-T))<\infty$.
With this definition, Theorem 4.11 and Corollary 4.12 are valid also for nonselfadjoint linear operators.
For the next theorem, however, we need selfadjointness and symmetry of the operators involved.

Theorem 4.13. Let $T$ be selfadjoint and $S$ a symmetric, $T$-compact linear operator. Then the following holds.
(i) $T+S$ is selfadjoint and $\sigma_{\text {ess }}(T)=\sigma_{\text {ess }}(T+S)$.
(ii) $T$ and $T+S$ have the same singular sequences.

Proof. That $T+S$ is selfadjoint follows from Theorem 4.7.
Let $\lambda \in \sigma_{\text {ess }}(T)$ and $\left(x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ a singular sequence for $T$ and $\lambda$ (see Theorem ??) It follows that $\left(T x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ converges weakly to 0 . In particular, $\left(x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ converges weakly to 0 in $\left(\mathcal{D}(T),\|\cdot\|_{T}\right)$. Since $S$ is $T$-compact, $\left(S x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ converges to zero Consequently $(T+S-\lambda) x_{n}=(T-\lambda) x_{n}+S x_{n} \rightarrow 0$ for $n \rightarrow \infty$.

Now let $\lambda \in \sigma_{\text {ess }}(T+S)$ and $\left(x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ a singular sequence for $T+S$ and $\lambda$. Since $S$ (and hence $-S$ ) is $T+S$-compact by Theorem 4.7, by what we already showed we find that $\left(x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ is also a singular sequence for $T+S-S=T$ and $\lambda$.

### 4.4 Application: Schrödinger operators

The following is taken mostly from [Kat95, V S5].
Let $\Delta=\frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial x_{1}^{2}}+\frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial x_{2}^{2}}+\frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial x_{3}^{2}}$. We want to find realisations of $\Delta$ on the space $H:=L\left(\mathbb{R}^{3}\right)$.

The minimal operator $T_{0}$ is Laplace operator with the compactly supported infinitely differentiable functions, that is

$$
\begin{equation*}
T_{0} f=\Delta f \quad \text { for all } f \in \mathcal{D}\left(T_{0}\right):=C_{c}^{\infty}\left(\mathbb{R}^{3}\right) . \tag{4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Recall that the Fourier transformation is a unitary operator on $L\left(R^{3}\right)$ and its restriction to the space $\mathcal{S}$ of the test functions (Schwartz functions). Recall that $f \in \mathcal{S}$ if and only if it is infinitely differentiable and for every $\alpha \in \mathbb{N}_{0}^{3}$ and $p \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ there exists a constant $C_{\alpha, p, f}$ such that

$$
\left(1+|x|^{2 p}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}\left|D^{\alpha} f(x)\right| \leq C_{\alpha, p, f}, \quad x \in \mathbb{R}^{3} .
$$

The restriction of the Fourier transformation maps $\mathcal{S}$ bijectively on itself.

Theorem 4.14 (The free Schrödinger operator). $T_{0}$ is essentially selfadjoint. Is closure $H_{0}$ is

$$
H_{0}=\mathcal{F}^{-1} M_{k^{2}} \mathcal{F}, \quad \mathcal{D}\left(H_{0}\right)=\mathcal{F}^{-1} \mathcal{D}\left(M_{k^{2}}\right),
$$

where $\mathcal{F}$ is the Fourier transformation and $M_{k^{2}}$ is the maximal operator of multiplication by $|k|^{2}=k_{1}^{2}+k_{2}^{2}+k_{3}^{2}$ in $L\left(\mathbb{R}^{3}, \mathrm{~d} k^{3}\right)$.

Proof. Since the Fourier transformation is unitary and $M_{k^{2}}$ is selfadjoint, so is $H_{0}$.

Note that $T_{0}$ is symmetric, hence it is closable. We have to show that $\overline{T_{0}}=H_{0}$. We define two auxiliary operators:

$$
T_{1}=-\left.\Delta\right|_{\mathcal{S}}, \quad M_{k^{2}}^{0}=\left.M_{k^{2}}\right|_{C_{c}^{\infty}\left(\mathbb{R}^{3}\right)}
$$

Step 1. $\overline{T_{1}}=\overline{T_{0}}$.
$\overline{\text { It suffices to show }} T_{1} \subseteq \overline{T_{1}}$. Let $w \in C_{c}\left(\mathbb{R}^{3}\right)$ such that $0 \leq w \leq 1$ and $w(x)=1$ for all $|x| \leq 1$. For $n \in \mathbb{N}$ we define $w_{n}(s):=w\left(\frac{x}{n}\right)$. Fix $f \in \mathcal{D}\left(T_{1}\right)=\mathcal{S}$. We define all $|x| \leq 1$. For $n \in \mathbb{N}$ we define $w_{n}(s):=w\left(\frac{x}{n}\right)$. Fix $\in \mathcal{D}\left(T_{1}\right)=\mathcal{S}$. We define
$f_{n}:=w_{n} f \in C_{c}^{\infty}\left(\mathbb{R}^{3}\right)=\mathcal{D}\left(T_{0}\right)$. Note that $f(x)=f_{n}(x)$ for $|x| \leq n$. Hence $f_{n} \rightarrow f$ because

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|f-f_{n}\right\|^{2} & =\int_{\mathbb{R}^{3}}\left|f(x)-f_{n}(x)\right|^{2} \mathrm{~d} x \leq \int_{|x| \geq n}\left|f(x)-f_{n}(x)\right|^{2} \mathrm{~d} x \\
& \leq 2 \int_{|x| \geq n}|f(x)|^{2} \mathrm{~d} x \longrightarrow \infty, n \rightarrow \infty .
\end{aligned}
$$

To show that also $T_{0} f_{n} \rightarrow T_{1} f$ follows because

$$
\Delta\left(w_{n} f\right)(x)=w_{n}(x) \Delta f(x)+\frac{2}{n} \nabla w(x / n) \cdot \nabla f(x)+\frac{1}{n^{2}} f(x) \Delta w(x / n) .
$$

Note that $|\nabla w(x / n)|$ and $|\Delta w(x / n)|$ are bounded with bound independent of $n$ and that $|\nabla f|, \Delta f \in L_{2}\left(\mathbb{R}^{3}\right)$ because $f \in \mathcal{S}$. Hence we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|T f-T f_{n}\right\| & \leq\left(\int_{|x| \geq n}|1-w(x / n)||\Delta f(x)| \mathrm{d} x\right. \\
& \left.+\frac{2}{n} \int_{\mathbb{R}^{3}}\left|\nabla f(x)\left\|\nabla w(x / n)\left|\mathrm{d} x+\frac{1}{n^{2}} \int_{\mathbb{R}^{3}}\right| f(x)\right\| \Delta w(x / n)\right| \mathrm{d} x\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

and all terms tend to 0 for $n \rightarrow \infty$. We have shown that $f \in \mathcal{D}\left(\overline{T_{0}}\right)$.

## Step 2. $M_{k^{2}}=\overline{M_{k^{2}} \mid \mathcal{S}}$.

It suffices to show that $M_{k^{2}} \subseteq \overline{M_{k^{2}}^{0}}$. Let $f \in \mathcal{D}\left(M_{k^{2}}\right)$. Then the function $g:=(1+$ $\left.\left(M_{k^{2}}\right)^{2}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}} f$ belongs to $L_{2}\left(\mathbb{R}^{3}\right)$. Therefore there exists a sequence $\left(\varphi_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \subseteq C_{c}^{\infty}\left(\mathbb{R}^{3}\right)$ such that $\varphi_{n} \rightarrow g$ and let $f_{n}=\left(1+\left(M_{k^{2}}\right)^{2}\right)^{-\frac{1}{2}} \varphi_{n}$. Then $f_{n} \in C_{c}^{\infty}\left(\mathbb{R}^{3}\right)$ for all $n \in \mathbb{N}$ Moreover $f_{n} \rightarrow f$ and $M_{k^{2}} f_{n} \rightarrow M_{k^{2}} f$. Hence we have shown that $f \in \mathcal{D}\left(\overline{M_{k^{2}}^{0}}\right)$. In summary it follows that

$$
H_{0}=\mathcal{F}^{-1} M_{k^{2}} \mathcal{F}=\mathcal{F}^{-1} \overline{M_{k^{2}} \mid \mathcal{S}} \mathcal{F}=\overline{\mathcal{F}^{-1} M_{k^{2}} \mid{ }_{\mathcal{S}} \mathcal{F}}=\overline{T_{1}}=\overline{T_{0}}
$$

Since the Fourier transformation is unitary, the spectra of $M_{k^{2}}$ and $H_{0}$ are equal. So we have the following corollary.

Corollary 4.15. $\sigma\left(H_{0}\right)=\sigma_{\text {ess }}\left(H_{0}\right)=[0, \infty)$.
In the next proposition we collect some properties of functions belonging to $\mathcal{D}\left(H_{0}\right)$.
Proposition 4.16 (Properties of $\left.u \in \mathcal{D}\left(H_{0}\right)\right)$. Let $u \in \mathcal{D}\left(H_{0}\right)$.
(i) $\|\mathcal{F} u\| \leq \frac{\pi}{\sqrt{\alpha}}\left\|\left(H_{0}+\alpha^{2}\right)^{-1}\right\|^{2}<\infty$ for all $\alpha>0$.
(ii) There exists a constant $c>0$, such that for all $\alpha>0$ and all $u \in H$
(iii) For $\alpha>0$ and $\gamma \in\left(0, \frac{1}{2}\right)$ there exists a constant $c>0$, such that for all $u \in H$ and all $x, y \in \mathbb{R}^{3}$

$$
|u(x)-u(y)| \leq c|x-y|^{\gamma}\left(\alpha^{-\left(\frac{1}{2}-\gamma\right)}\left\|H_{0} x\right\|+\alpha^{\frac{3}{2}+\gamma}\|u\|\right),
$$

that is, $u$ is Hölder continuous.
Proof. (i) Let $u \in \mathcal{D}\left(H_{0}\right)$. Then the function $k \mapsto\left(1+k^{2}\right)(\mathcal{F} f)(k)$ belongs to $L_{2}\left(\mathbb{R}^{3}\right)$. Therefore, using Hölder's inequality, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(\int_{\mathbb{R}^{3}}|\mathcal{F} u(k)|^{2} \mathrm{~d} k\right)^{2} & =\left(\left.\int_{\mathbb{R}^{3}} \frac{1}{k^{2}+1}\left(1+k^{2}\right) \right\rvert\, \mathcal{F} u(k) \mathrm{d} k\right)^{2} \\
& \leq\left(\int_{\mathbb{R}^{3}} \frac{1}{\left(1+k^{2}\right)^{2}} \mathrm{~d} k\right) \int_{\mathbb{R}^{3}}\left(\left(1+k^{2}\right)^{2}|\mathcal{F} u(k)|^{2} \mathrm{~d} k\right)^{2} \\
& =\frac{\pi^{2}}{\alpha}\left\|\left(M_{k^{2}}+\alpha\right) \mathcal{F}(u)\right\|=\frac{\pi^{2}}{\alpha}\left\|\left(H_{0}+\alpha\right)(u)\right\| .
\end{aligned}
$$

(ii) Using the estimate from (i) we find for $u \in \mathcal{D}\left(H_{0}\right)$

$$
\begin{aligned}
|u(x)| & =\left|\mathcal{F}^{-1} \mathcal{F} u(x)\right|=(2 \pi)^{-\frac{3}{2}}\left|\int_{\mathbb{R}^{3}} \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} k x} \mathcal{F} u(k) \mathrm{d} k\right| \\
& \leq(2 \pi)^{-\frac{3}{2}} \int_{\mathbb{R}^{3}} \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} k x}|\mathcal{F} u(k)|^{2} \mathrm{~d} k \leq \alpha^{-\frac{1}{2}} \pi^{2}(2 \pi)^{-\frac{3}{2}} \|\left(H_{0}+\alpha^{2} u \|\right. \\
& \leq c\left(\alpha^{-\frac{1}{2}}\left\|H_{0} u\right\|+\alpha^{\frac{3}{2}}\|u\|\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

(iii) We note that

$$
\left|\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} k x}-\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} k y}\right|=\left|1-\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} k(x-y)}\right| \leq \min \{2,|k||x-y|\} \leq 2^{1-\gamma}(|k||x-y|)^{\gamma} .
$$

$$
\text { For } \gamma \in\left(0, \frac{1}{2}\right) \text { we have that } \int_{\mathbb{R}^{3}}|k|^{\gamma}|\mathcal{F} u(k)| \mathrm{d} k=\int_{\mathbb{R}^{3}} \frac{|k|^{\gamma}}{1+k^{2}}\left(1+|k|^{2}\right)|\mathcal{F} u(k)| \mathrm{d} k<\infty \text {. }
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
|u(x)-u(y)| & =(2 \pi)^{-\frac{3}{2}}\left|\int_{\mathbb{R}^{3}}\left(\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} k x}-\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} k y}\right) \mathcal{F} u(k) \mathrm{d} k\right| \\
& \leq(2 \pi)^{-\frac{3}{2}} \int_{\mathbb{R}^{3}}\left|\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} k x}-\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} k y}\right||\mathcal{F} u(k)| \mathrm{d} k \\
& \leq(2 \pi)^{-\frac{3}{2}} 2^{1-\gamma}|x-y| \int_{\mathbb{R}^{3}}|k|^{\gamma}|\mathcal{F} u(k)| \mathrm{d} k \\
& \leq(2 \pi)^{-\frac{3}{2}} 2^{1-\gamma}|x-y|\left(\int_{\mathbb{R}^{3}} \frac{|k|^{\gamma}}{1+|k|^{2}} \mathrm{~d} k\right)\left(\int_{\mathbb{R}^{3}}\left(1+|k|^{2}\right)|\mathcal{F} u(k)| \mathrm{d} k\right) \\
& \leq(2 \pi)^{-\frac{3}{2}} 2^{1-\gamma}|x-y| C(\gamma) \frac{\pi^{2}}{\alpha}\left\|\left(H_{0}+\alpha^{2}\right) u\right\|^{2} .
\end{align*}
$$

## Schrödinger operators with potential

In the following we will always assume

$$
q=q_{0}+q_{1}
$$

where $q_{0} \in L_{\infty}\left(\mathbb{R}^{3}\right)$ and $q_{1} \in L_{2}\left(\mathbb{R}^{3}\right)$. The maximal multiplication operators on $L_{2}\left(\mathbb{R}^{3}\right)$ associated to these functions will be denoted by $Q, Q_{0}, Q_{1}$ respectively. Let $T_{0}$ be defined as before in (4.4). Then the operator

$$
S_{0}:=T_{0}+Q
$$

is well-defined because $\mathcal{D}\left(T_{0}\right)=C_{c}^{\infty}\left(\mathbb{R}^{3}\right) \subseteq \mathcal{D}(A)$.

Theorem 4.17. $S_{0}$ is essentially selfadjoint and $H:=\bar{S}_{0}=H_{0}+Q$
Proof. We will show that $Q$ is $T$-bounded with relative bound 0 . By the KatoRellich theorem (Theorem 4.10) the assertion is then proved. Let $u \in \mathcal{D}\left(H_{0}\right)$. By Proposition 4.16, $u$ is bounded, hence $u \in \mathcal{D}\left(Q_{1}\right)$ and

$$
\left\|Q_{1} u\right\|=\left\|q_{1} u\right\| \leq\|u\|_{\infty}\left\|q_{1}\right\|_{2} \leq c\left\|q_{1}\right\|\left(\alpha^{\frac{3}{2}}\|u\|+\alpha^{-\frac{1}{2}}\left\|H_{0} u\right\|\right)
$$

Moreover, $\left\|Q_{0} u\right\|=\| \| q_{0} u\|\leq\| u\left\|_{2}\right\| q_{0} \|_{\infty}$. It follows that $\mathcal{D}\left(H_{0}\right) \subseteq \mathcal{D}(Q)$ and
$\|Q u\| \leq\left\|Q_{1} u\right\|+\left\|Q_{0} u\right\| \leq\left(c\left\|q_{1}\right\| \alpha^{\frac{3}{2}}+\left\|q_{0}\right\|_{\infty}\right)\|u\|+c\left\|q_{1}\right\| \alpha^{-\frac{1}{2}}\left\|H_{0} u\right\|$.
Since $\alpha$ can be taken arbitrarily large, the theorem is proved.
Theorem 4.18. Assume that the conditions of Theorem 4.17 hold. Additionally, assume that $q_{0}(x) \rightarrow 0$ for $|x| \rightarrow \infty$. Then $Q$ is $H_{0}$-compact and $\sigma_{\text {ess }}(H)=[0, \infty)$.
Proof. By Theorem 4.13 and Corollary 4.15 it suffices to show that $Q$ is $T_{0}$-compact First assume that $Q_{0}=0$. Let $\left(x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \subseteq \mathcal{D}\left(T_{0}\right) \subseteq \mathcal{D}\left(H_{0}\right)$ such that $\left(x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ and $\left(T x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ are bounded. We have to show that $\left(Q x_{n_{k}}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{N}}$ converges for some subsequence. By Proposition 4.16 it follows that $\left(x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ is Hölder continuous and therefore equicontinuous. By assumption it is also uniformely bounded. Hence, by the Arzelá-Ascoli theorem, for every compact ball $B_{N}(0)$ there exists a subsequence that converges uniformly in $B_{N}(0)$. Using a diagonal sequence argument, we obtain a subsequence $\left(x_{n_{k}}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{N}}$ that converges on $\mathbb{R}^{3}$ uniformly to some bounded continuous unction $v$. Note that $v$ belongs to $L_{2}\left(\mathbb{R}^{3}\right)$. Therefore, because $Q_{1}$ is a multiplication operator with an $L_{2}$-function, $Q_{1} u_{n_{k}} \rightarrow Q_{1} v$.
If $Q_{0} \neq 0$ then we can choose a sequence $\tilde{q}_{n}$ of compactly supported bounded funcions which converge uniformly to $q_{0}$. Let $Q_{n}$ be the corresponding multiplication operators. Note that $\left\|Q_{n}-Q_{0}\right\| \rightarrow 0$ for $n \rightarrow \infty$. By what is already shown it follows that $Q_{n}+Q_{1}$ is $T_{0}$-compact. Hence $\left(Q_{n}+Q_{1}\right)\left(H_{0}-1\right)^{-1}$ is compact. Then also $\left(\widetilde{Q}_{0}+Q_{1}\right)\left(H_{0}-1\right)^{-1}$ is compact since it is the limit of compact operators a. can be seen from
$\left\|\left(\widetilde{Q}_{n}+Q_{1}\right)\left(H_{0}-1\right)^{-1}-\left(Q_{0}+Q_{1}\right)\left(H_{0}-1\right)^{-1}\right\|$
$=\left\|\left(\widetilde{Q}_{n}+Q_{0}\right)\left(H_{0}-1\right)^{-1}\right\| \leq\left\|\widetilde{Q}_{n}+Q_{0}\right\|\left\|\left(H_{0}-1\right)^{-1}\right\| . \quad \square$
Note that for example the Coulomb potential $q(x)=\frac{\mathrm{e}}{|x|}$ satisfies the conditions of Theorem 4.18.

Consequently, in an autonomous system we find for every initial value $z_{0} \in X$ at time $t_{0}$ and for all $s, t>0$ :

## Chapter 5

## Operator semigroups

### 5.1 Motivation

This chapter follows very closely [EN00].
Definition 5.1. A semigroup is a set $M$ with an associative operation on $M$. A semigroup with a neutral element is called monoid (or semigroup with a neutral element).

Example. - $\left(\mathbb{R}_{+},+\right)$with the usual addition on $\mathbb{R}_{+}:=[0, \infty)$

- $\left(\mathbb{R}_{+}, *\right)$ with $s * t:=\mathrm{e}^{s+t}, s, t \geq 0$; associativity of $*$ follows from associativity of $\left(\mathbb{R}_{+},+\right)$.

In this chapter we will deal with semigroups of linear operators with some additional properties.

There are two ways to access semigroups: Using the functional equation (FE) or the initial value problem ACP.

## Semigroups for autonomous systems

A physical system is described by a point in a phase space $X$. Which space is appropriate as phase space, depends on the given system. Points in phase space are called states of the given system.

Let $z_{0}$ be a point in the phase space $X$ describing the given system at time $t_{0}$, then the system after time $t>0$ will be in some state $\left(z_{0}\right)_{t}$. We assume that the new state does not depend on the initial time $t_{0}$ or the history of the state, but only on the initial state $z_{0}$ and the elapsed time $t$. In this case the system is called autonomous.

$$
\begin{aligned}
z_{0} & :=\text { state with initial value } z_{0} \text { at time } t_{0} \\
\left(z_{0}\right)_{t} & :=\text { state with initial value } z_{0} \text { after time } t \\
\left(\left(z_{0}\right)_{t}\right)_{s} & :=\text { state with initial value }\left(z_{0}\right)_{t} \text { after time } s \\
& =\text { with initial value } z_{0} \text { after time } t+s \\
& =\left(z_{0}\right)_{t+s}
\end{aligned}
$$

Let us write $U(t) z_{0}$ instead of $\left(z_{0}\right)_{t}, t>0$. We obtain

$$
U(s+t) z_{0}=U(s) U(t) z_{0}, \quad s, t>0
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
U(0) z_{0}=z_{0} \tag{5.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

If this is true for every possible $z_{0} \in X$, this yields the functional equation

$$
\begin{aligned}
U(s+t) & =U(s) U(t), \quad s, t>0, \\
U(0) & =\text { id } .
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence the set of all $\{U(t): t>0\}$ with the operation given in $(\mathrm{FE})$ is a semigroup with neutral element (associativity follows from the associativity of the addition in $\mathbb{R}_{+}$).

Examples 5.2.

1. Mass on a spring.

We consider a particle with mass $m>0$ hanging on an ideal spring with Hook's constant $k>0$ (that is, we neglect friction and assume that Hook's law holds fo arbitrarily large amplitudes and momenta). The system is describes completely by the position $x$ and the momentum $p$ of the particle at a given time $t_{0}$. For the phase space we can therefore choose $X=\mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{R}=$ position $\times$ momentum.

Without restriction we assume $t_{0}=0$. The equation of motion is

$$
m \ddot{x}=-k x, \quad p=m \dot{x}, \quad t \geq 0, \quad x(0)=x_{0}, \quad p(0)=p_{0}
$$

or, written as first order system,

$$
\frac{\mathrm{d}}{\mathrm{~d} t}\binom{x}{p}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & m^{-1}  \tag{5.2}\\
-k & 0
\end{array}\right)\binom{x}{p}, \quad\binom{x}{p}(0)=\binom{x_{0}}{p_{0}} .
$$

By the theorem of Picard-Lindelöf the system has a unique solution. It is given by the Picard-Lindelöf iteration as

$$
\binom{x}{p}(t)=\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{t^{n}}{n!}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & m^{-1} \\
-k & 0
\end{array}\right)^{n}\binom{x_{0}}{p_{0}},
$$

In this case the time evolution is given by

$$
U(t)=\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{t^{n}}{n!}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & m^{-1} \\
-k & 0
\end{array}\right)^{n}=: \exp \left(t\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & m^{-1} \\
-k & 0
\end{array}\right)\right)
$$

In this simple one-dimensional example we observe:

- All initial values $\left(x_{0}, p_{0}\right)^{t}$ are allowed.
- The solutions exist and are unique for all $t \geq 0$ and they are continuous for $t \searrow 0$.
- The solutions depend continuously on the initial value $\left(x_{0}, p_{0}\right)^{t}$.
- Also $t<0$ is allowed.
- The asymptotic behaviour of the solutions depend on the eigenvalues of the matrix $\left(\begin{array}{cc}0 & m^{-1} \\ -k & 0\end{array}\right)$.
- It is easy to check the the functional equation (FE) holds.

2. Heat conducting rod.

Let $f(x, t)$ be the temperature in an ideal heat conducting rod of length $L$ at position $x \in[0, L]$ and time $t \geq 0$. As phase space we choose $X=C([0, L])$ oder $X=L_{p}(0, L)$. If we disregard boundary conditions, we are led to the following initial value problem

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial f}{\partial t} & =\kappa \frac{\partial^{2} f}{\partial x^{2}}, \quad t \geq 0, x \in[0, L], \\
f(\cdot, 0) & =\varphi_{0} \in X .
\end{aligned}
$$

Instead of treating this initial value problem as a partial differential equation in $(0, L) \times \mathbb{R}_{+}$, we can consider it as a first order problem in the space $X$ :

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{d}{d t} \varphi=A \varphi, \quad t \geq 0  \tag{ACP}\\
& \varphi(0)=\varphi_{0}
\end{align*}
$$

where $A$ is the unbounded operator $A=\kappa \frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial x^{2}}$ in the space $X$ (in order to define $A$, we have to specify its domain $\mathcal{D}(A)$; here the boundary conditions enter) and $\varphi$ is a map $\mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow X($ here $\varphi(t)=f(\cdot, t), t \geq 0)$.

If $X$ is a Banach space and $A$ a linear operator in $X$, then a problem of the form (ACP) is called an abstract Cauchy problem.
Formally, the solution of (ACP) is again " $\varphi(t)=\mathrm{e}^{t A} \varphi_{0}$ ". In contrast to the first example, however, where the linear operator $\left(\begin{array}{cc}0 & m^{-1} \\ -k & 0\end{array}\right)$ is bounded, here we have the following problems and questions:

- If $A$ is unbounded, then only initial values $\varphi_{0} \in \mathcal{D}(A)$ are allowed in (ACP).
- If $\varphi_{0} \in \mathcal{D}(A)$, does (ACP) then have a solution $\varphi(\cdot)$ ?
- How does the time asymptotic of solutions depend on the spectrum of $A$ ?
- What is a solution of (ACP)?

3. More examples.

Many partial differential equations can be treated as above, for instance the Schrödinger equation

$$
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \Psi=\mathrm{i} \Delta \Psi+\mathrm{i} V \Psi
$$

or the Navier-Stokes equation

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \Psi-\Delta \Psi+(\Psi \cdot \nabla) \Psi+\nabla p & =0 \\
\div \Psi & =0 \\
\left.\Psi\right|_{t=0} & =\Psi_{0} .
\end{aligned}
$$

We are going to deal with existence and uniqueness of solutions of problems of the form (ACP). This will depend on properties of the operator $A$. The main theorems are the generation theorems by Hille and Yosida (Theorem 5.31), by Lumer and Phillips (Theorem 5.44) and by Stone (Theorem 5.47).

### 5.2 Basic definitions and properties

## Definition 5.3. Let $X$ be a Banach space.

(i) A family $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0} \subseteq L(X)$ is called a semigroup (more precisely a 1-parameter operator semigroup) if

$$
\begin{align*}
T(t+s) & =T(t) T(s), \quad t, s \geq 0  \tag{5.3}\\
T(0) & =\operatorname{id} .
\end{align*}
$$

(ii) A family $\mathcal{S}=(S(t))_{t \in \mathbb{R}} \subseteq L(X)$ is called a group (more precisely a 1-parameter group) if

$$
\begin{align*}
S(t+s) & =S(t) S(s), \quad t, s \in \mathbb{R}  \tag{5.4}\\
S(0) & =\mathrm{id} .
\end{align*}
$$

Definition 5.4. Let $X$ be a Banach space and $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ a semigroup on $X$. Let us consider the map

$$
T: \mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow L(X), \quad t \mapsto T(t)
$$

(i) $\mathcal{T}$ is called a uniformly continuous semigroup if $T$ is continuous with respect to the operator norm;
that is, for every $t_{0} \geq 0$ and every $\varepsilon>0$ exists a $\delta>0$ such that $\| T\left(t_{0}\right)-$ $T(t) \|<\varepsilon$ for all $t \geq 0$ with $\left|t-t_{0}\right|<\delta$.
(ii) $\mathcal{T}$ is called strongly continuous or a $C_{0}$-semigroup ${ }^{1}$, if $T$ is strongly continuous; that is, for every $x \in X$ the map $\mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow X, t \mapsto T(t) x$ is continuous,
that is, for every $x \in X, t_{0} \geq 0$ and $\varepsilon>0$ exists a $\delta>0$ such that $\| T(t) x-$ $T\left(t_{0}\right) x \|<\varepsilon$ for all $t \geq 0$ with $\left|t-t_{0}\right|<\delta$.

Examples. (i) Let $X=\mathbb{C}$ and $a \in \mathbb{C}$. Then $T(t)=\mathrm{e}^{a t}$ defines a strongly continuous semigroup.
(ii) Let $X=\mathbb{C}^{n}$ and $A \in M_{n}(\mathbb{C})$. Then $T(t)=\mathrm{e}^{A t}$ defines a strongly continuous semigroup on $X$.

Example 5.5 (Multiplication semigroup). Let $X=D(K)$ where $K$ is compact subset of $\mathbb{C}$ and fix $q \in C(K)$. Then $(T(t) f)(\xi)=\mathrm{e}^{t q(\xi)} f(\xi)$ defines a uniformly continuous semigroup on $C(K)$.

Example 5.6 (Translation semigroup). Consider the function spaces
(i) $X=L_{\infty}(\mathbb{R})$
(ii) $X=\operatorname{BUC}(\mathbb{R}):=\{f: \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}: f$ bounded and uniformly continuous $\}$
(iii) $X=L_{p}(\mathbb{R})$.

In each case, the translation operators are defined by

$$
T(t) f(\xi)=f(\xi+t), \quad t \geq 0, \xi \in \mathbb{R}
$$

In all three cases $T(t) \in L(X), t \geq 0$, and $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ satisfies (5.3), hence it is In all three cases $T(t) \in L(X), t \geq 0$,
a semigroup on $X$. a semigroup on $X$
In case (i), is $\mathcal{T}$ not strongly continuous, hence is cannot be continuous in norm For instance, let

$$
f: \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}, \quad f(\xi)= \begin{cases}1, & \xi \geq 0 \\ -1, & \xi<0\end{cases}
$$

then $f \in L_{\infty}(\mathbb{R})$ and $\|T(t) f-T(0) f\|_{\infty}=2, t>0$, consequently $T(\cdot) f$ is not continuous in $0(\mathcal{T}$ is not strongly continuous in 0$)$.
In the cases (ii) and (iii) $\mathcal{T}$ is a strongly continuous by not norm continuous semigroup on $X$. It can be shown that $\|T(t)-\mathrm{id}\|=2$ for $t>0$.

Proposition 5.7. Let $X$ be a Banach space and $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t>0}$ a semigroup on $X$. Then the following is equivalent:
(i) $T$ is strongly continuous.
(ii) $T$ is strongly continuous in 0 .
(iii) There exist $\delta>0, M \geq 1$ and a dense subset $D \subseteq X$ such that

$$
\text { (a) }\|T(t)\| \leq M, \quad t \in[0, \delta] \text {, }
$$

$$
\text { (b) } \lim _{t \backslash 0} T(t) x=x, \quad x \in D \text {. }
$$

If (iii) (a) holds, then, with $\omega=\frac{\log M}{\delta}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|T(t)\| \leq M \mathrm{e}^{t \omega}, \quad t \geq 0 \tag{5.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. First we show the estimate (5.5): For every $t \in \mathbb{R}_{+}$there exists an $n \in \mathbb{N}_{0}$ and $\tau \in[0, \delta)$ such that $t=\tau+n \delta$. Using the semigroup property of $\mathcal{T}$ and the estimate (iii)(a) and $0<n \log M \leq \frac{t}{\delta} \log M=t \omega$, we find

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|T(t)\| & =\|T(\tau+n \delta)\|=\|T(\tau) \underbrace{T(\delta) \cdots T(\delta)}_{n \text {-mal }}\| \leq\|T(\tau)\|\|T(\delta)\|^{n} \leq M M^{n} \\
& =M \mathrm{e}^{n \log M} \leq M \mathrm{e}^{t \omega}
\end{aligned}
$$

(ii) $\Rightarrow$ (iii) We only have to show (iii)(a). Assume there exist no $\delta>0$ and $M \geq 1$ such that (iii)(a) holds. Then there is a sequence $\left(t_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \subseteq \mathbb{R}_{+}$with $t_{n} \searrow 0$ and $x \in X$ such that $n \rightarrow \infty$. By the uniform boundedness principle, there exists an $x \in X$ such that $\left\|T\left(t_{n}\right) x\right\| \rightarrow \infty, n \rightarrow \infty$. Consequently $T\left(t_{n}\right) x \nrightarrow x=T(0) x$, in contradiction to the strong continuity of $T$ in 0 .
(iii) $\Rightarrow$ (ii) Let $\left(t_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ with $t_{n} \searrow 0, n \rightarrow \infty$; without restriction we can assume $t_{n} \leq \delta, n \in \mathbb{N}$. By assumption $\left\|T\left(t_{n}\right)\right\| \leq M, n \in \mathbb{N}$, and $\left.T(\cdot) x\right|_{K}$ is continuous fo . $\min \{\varepsilon / 3, \varepsilon /(3 M)\}$ and choose $N \in \mathbb{N}$ large enough such that $\left\|T\left(t_{n}\right) y-y\right\|<\varepsilon / 3$ for $n \geq N$. This implies

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|T\left(t_{n}\right) x-x\right\| & \leq\left\|T\left(t_{n}\right)(x-y)\right\|+\left\|T\left(t_{n}\right) y-y\right\|+\|y-x\| \\
& \leq\left\|T\left(t_{n}\right)\right\|\|x-y\|+\left\|T\left(t_{n}\right) y-y\right\|+\|y-x\|<\varepsilon .
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $\left(t_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ and $\varepsilon>0$ can be chosen arbitrary, the claim $\lim _{t \backslash 0}\|T(t) x-x\|=0$ is proved.
(ii) $\Rightarrow$ (i) Let $t_{0}, h>0$ and $x \in X$ be given.

Right continuity of $\mathcal{T}$ in $t_{0}$ : Since $\mathcal{T}$ is strongly continuous in 0 , it follows that

$$
\left\|T\left(t_{0}+h\right) x-T\left(t_{0}\right) x\right\| \leq\left\|T\left(t_{0}\right)\right\|\|T(h) x-x\| \longrightarrow 0 . \quad h \searrow 0,
$$

Right continuity of $\mathcal{T}$ in $t_{0}$ : We already showed "(ii) $\Rightarrow$ (iii)", hence $\|T(t)\| \leq M \mathrm{e}^{t \omega}$, $t \geq 0$, for appropriate $M \geq 1$ and $\omega \in \mathbb{R}$. This implies

$$
\left\|T\left(t_{0}\right) x-T\left(t_{0}-h\right) x\right\| \leq \underbrace{\left\|T\left(t_{0}-h\right)\right\|}_{\text {bounded }} \underbrace{\|T(h) x-x\|}_{\rightarrow 0, h \rightarrow 0} \longrightarrow 0, \quad h \searrow 0 .
$$

(i) $\Rightarrow$ (ii) is clear.

Definition 5.8. A strongly continuous semigroup $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ on a Banach space $X$ is called
(i) bounded, if we can choose $\omega=0$ in (5.5)
(ii) contractive or a contraction semigroup if we can choose $\omega=0$ and $M=1$ in (5.5).
(iii) isometric if $\|T(t) x\|=\|x\|, t \geq 0, x \in X$.

Definition 5.9. Let $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ be a strongly continuous semigroup on a Banach space $X$. Then
$\omega_{0}=\omega_{0}(\mathcal{T}):=\inf \left\{\omega \in \mathbb{R}: \exists M \geq 1\right.$ such that $\left.\|T(t)\| \leq M \mathrm{e}^{t \omega}, t \geq 0\right\}$ is the growth bound or the type of $\mathcal{T}$.
Remarks 5.10. - It is possible that $\omega_{0}=-\infty$ : Every nilpotent semigroup has growth bound $-\infty$. (A semigroup is nilpotent, if there exists an $T \geq 0$ such that $T(t)=0$ for all $t \geq 0$.)
For instance, let $X=L_{p}(0, a)$ for some $a \in(0, \infty)$ and

$$
(T(t) f)(\xi):=\left\{\begin{array}{ll}
f(t-\xi), & t \leq \xi \leq a, \\
0, & \text { else },
\end{array} \quad f \in X\right.
$$

Obviously, $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ is a semigroup on $X$ and $\omega_{0}(\mathcal{T})=-\infty$.

- The infimum in (5.6) is in general not a minimum.
- In general $M$ has to be chosen $>1$, independently how large $\omega$ is chosen.


### 5.3 Uniformly continuous semigroups

Definition 5.11. Let $X$ be a Banach space and $A \in L(X)$. Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\exp (t A):=\mathrm{e}^{t A}:=\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{t^{n}}{n!} A^{n}, \quad t \in \mathbb{R} \tag{5.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then the family $(\exp (t A))_{t \geq 0}$ is the group generated by $A$, and $(\exp (t A))_{t \in \mathbb{R}}$ the semigroup generated by $A$.
The following proposition shows that Definition 5.11 makes sense.
Proposition 5.12. Let $X$ be a Banach space and $A \in L(X)$.
(i) $\exp (t A)$ converges absolutely and $\exp (t A) \in L(X)$ for all $t \in \mathbb{R}$.
(ii) $\exp (0 \cdot A)=$ id.
(iii) $\exp ((t+s) A)=\exp (t A) \exp (s A), s, t \geq 0$.
(iv) $\mathbb{R} \rightarrow L(X), t \mapsto \exp (t A)$ is continuous.
(v) If $S \in L(X)$, such that $S^{-1}$ exists and $S^{-1} \in L(X)$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\exp \left(S^{-1} A S\right)=S^{-1} \exp (A) S \tag{5.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

(vi) If $B \in L(X)$ with $A B=B A$, then $\exp (A+B)=\exp (A) \exp (B)=\exp (B) \exp (A)$.
(i)-(iv) show that $(\exp (t A))_{t \geq 0}$ is a uniformly continuous semigroup. Proof. (i) For $k<m \in \mathbb{N}$ we have
$\left\|\sum_{n=0}^{m} \frac{t^{n}}{n!} A^{n}-\sum_{n=0}^{k} \frac{t^{n}}{n!} A^{n}\right\|=\left\|\sum_{n=k+1}^{m} \frac{t^{n}}{n!} A^{n}\right\| \leq \sum_{n=k+1}^{m} \frac{t^{n}}{n!}\left\|A^{n}\right\| \longrightarrow 0, \quad k, m \rightarrow \infty$,
because $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{t^{n}}{n!}\|A\|^{n}=\mathrm{e}^{t\|A\|}$. Consequently, the sequence $\left(\sum_{n=0}^{k} \frac{t^{n}}{n!} A^{n}\right)_{k \in \mathbb{N}}$ is a Cauchy sequence in $L(X)$, hence it converges in $L(X)$ (because $L(X)$ is a Banach space).
(ii) is clear.
(iii) follows from (vi).
(iv) For $t, h \in \mathbb{R}$ we have that
$\|\exp ((t+h) A)-\exp (t A)\| \leq\|\exp (t A)\| \| \exp ((h A)-$ id $\|$
$=\|\exp (t A)\|\left\|\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{h^{n}}{n!} A^{n}\right\| \leq\|\exp (t A)\||h|\|A\| \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{h^{n}}{(n+1)!}\left\|A^{n}\right\|$
$\leq|h|\|A\|\|\exp (t A)\|\|\exp (h\|A\|)\|$.

Therefore $\exp ((t+h) A) \longrightarrow \exp (t A)$ for $h \rightarrow 0$.
(v) Since the series are absolutely convergent, we obtain

$$
\exp \left(S^{-1} A S\right)=\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{n!}\left(S^{-1} A S\right)^{n}=S^{-1}\left(\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{n!} A^{n}\right) S=S^{-1} \exp (A) S
$$

(vi) Since the series are absolutely convergent, we obtain with Cauchy's product formula

$$
\begin{align*}
\exp (A) \exp (B) & =\left(\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{n!} A^{n}\right)\left(\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{n!} B^{n}\right)=\sum_{n=0}^{\infty}\left(\sum_{k=0}^{n} \frac{1}{k!} A^{k} \frac{1}{(n-k)!} B^{n-k}\right) \\
& =\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{n!}\left(\sum_{k=0}^{n} \frac{n!}{k!(n-k)!} A^{k} B^{n-k}\right)=\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{n!}(A+B)^{n} \\
& =\exp (A+B)
\end{align*}
$$

Example 5.13 (Matrix semigroups). Let $X=\mathbb{C}^{n}$ and $A \in L(X)=M_{n}(\mathbb{C})$ Then Proposition 5.12 yields a technique how to calculate exponentials of matrices There exists a $S \in G l(n, \mathbb{C})$ such that $S A S^{-1}$ has Jordan normal form , that is, $A=S^{-1}(D+N) S$ with a diagonal matrix $D$ and a nilpotent matrix $N$ such that $N D=D N$. Then
$\exp (t A)=\exp \left(S^{-1}(t D+t N) S\right)=S^{-1} \exp (t D+t N) S=S^{-1} \exp (t D) \exp (t N) S$

$$
=S^{-1} \exp (t D)(\underbrace{\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{t^{n}}{n!} N^{n}}_{\substack{\text { olly finitely } \\ \text { many terms! }}}) S .
$$

For calculations we use: If $A$ is of block diagonal form

$$
A=\left(\begin{array}{cccc}
A_{1} & \cdots & \cdots & 0 \\
\vdots & A_{2} & & \vdots \\
\vdots & & \ddots & \vdots \\
0 & \cdots & \cdots & A_{j}
\end{array}\right)=: \operatorname{diag}\left(A_{1}, \ldots, A_{n}\right)
$$

where $A_{k} \in M\left(n_{k}, \mathbb{C}\right), n_{k} \in \mathbb{N}$, with $\sum_{k=1}^{j} n_{k}=n$, then

$$
\exp (t A)=\operatorname{diag}\left(\exp \left(t A_{1}\right), \ldots, \exp \left(t A_{n}\right)\right), \quad t \in \mathbb{R}
$$

In particular, for a Jordan block of length $m$

$$
J=\left(\begin{array}{ccccc}
\lambda & 1 & & & \\
0 & \lambda & 1 & & \\
\vdots & & \ddots & \ddots & \\
0 & \cdots & \cdots & \lambda & 1 \\
0 & \cdots & \cdots & \cdots & \lambda
\end{array}\right)
$$

we obtain

$$
\exp (t J)=\mathrm{e}^{t \lambda}\left(\begin{array}{ccccc}
1 & t & \cdots & \cdots & \frac{t^{m-1}}{(m-1)!} \\
0 & 1 & t & & \vdots \\
\vdots & & \ddots & \ddots & \vdots \\
0 & \cdots & \cdots & 1 & t \\
0 & \cdots & \cdots & \cdots & 1
\end{array}\right)
$$

The asymptotic behaviour of $\exp (t A) x$ depends on the Jordan structure of $A$
Example. Let $m>0, k \in \mathbb{R}$ and $A:=\left(\begin{array}{cc}0 & m^{-1} \\ -k & 0\end{array}\right)$ (see Example 5.2.1). Choose $\kappa \in \mathbb{C}$ such that $\kappa^{2}=-k$ and let $S:=\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}\left(\begin{array}{cc}\kappa & \sqrt{m}^{-1} \\ -\sqrt{m} & \kappa^{-1}\end{array}\right)$. Then

$$
S A S^{-1}=\frac{1}{2}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\kappa & \sqrt{m}^{-1} \\
-\sqrt{m} & \kappa^{-1}
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & m^{-1} \\
-k & 0
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\kappa^{-1} & -\sqrt{m}^{-1} \\
\sqrt{m} & \kappa
\end{array}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\frac{\kappa}{m} & 0 \\
0 & -\frac{\kappa}{m}
\end{array}\right)
$$

Recall that $k \geq 0$, whence $\kappa \in \mathbb{i} \mathbb{R}$. The solutions $\exp (t A)\binom{x_{0}}{p_{0}}$ are periodic with period $\omega=\frac{2 \pi m}{|\kappa|}$ because

$$
\begin{aligned}
\exp ((t+\omega) A) & =S^{-1} \exp \left((t+\omega)\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\frac{\kappa}{m} & 0 \\
0 & -\frac{\kappa}{m}
\end{array}\right)\right) S \\
& =S^{-1}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\exp \left((t+\omega) \frac{\kappa}{m}\right) & 0 \\
0 & \exp \left(-(t+\omega) \frac{\kappa}{m}\right)
\end{array}\right) S \\
& =S^{-1}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\exp \left(t \frac{\kappa}{m}\right) & 0 \\
0 & \exp \left(-t \frac{\kappa}{m}\right)
\end{array}\right) S=\exp (t A) .
\end{aligned}
$$

So far, we only considered the functional equation (FE). From Proposition 5.12 we know that for $A \in L(X)$ the group $(\exp (t A))_{t \in \mathbb{R}}$ is continuous. The following proposition shows that it is even differentiable.

Proposition 5.14. Let $X$ be a Banach space, $A \in L(X)$ and $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ the semigroup generated by $A$ (i.e., $T(t)=\exp (t A), t \geq 0)$. Then the following holds:
(i) The map $\mathbb{R} \rightarrow L(X), t \mapsto T(t)$, is differentiable and with derivative

$$
\frac{d}{d t} T(t)=A T(t)=T(t) A, \quad t \in \mathbb{R} .
$$

(ii) If $S: \mathbb{R} \rightarrow L(X)$ is a solution of

$$
\begin{equation*}
U(0)=\operatorname{id}, \quad \frac{d}{d t} U(t)=A U(t), \quad t \in \mathbb{R}, \tag{5.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\text { then } S=T \text {. }
$$

Proof. (i) Because of

$$
\frac{T(t+h)-T(t)}{h}=T(t) \frac{T(h)-\mathrm{id}}{h}=\frac{T(h)-\mathrm{id}}{h} T(t), \quad t \in \mathbb{R}, h \in \mathbb{R} \backslash\{0\},
$$

is suffices to show the differentiability in $t=0$ with $\frac{d}{d t} T(0)=A$. This follows from

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|\frac{1}{h}(T(h)-T(0))-A\right\| & =\left\|\frac{1}{h} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{h^{n}}{n!} A^{n}-A\right\|=\left\|\frac{1}{h} \sum_{n=2}^{\infty} \frac{h^{n}}{n!} A^{n}\right\| \\
& \leq|h|\|A\|^{2} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{h^{n}\|A\|^{n}}{(n+2)!} \leq|h|\|A\|^{2} \exp (h\|A\|) \longrightarrow 0,
\end{aligned}
$$

for $|h| \rightarrow 0$.
(ii) Observe that $T(0)=S(0)$ by assumption. For arbitrary $t_{0} \in \mathbb{R}$ it follows that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{d}{d t}\left(T(t) S\left(t_{0}-t\right)\right) & =\left(\frac{d}{d t} T(t)\right) S\left(t_{0}-t\right)+T(t)\left(\frac{d}{d t} S\left(t_{0}-t\right)\right) \\
& =A T(t) S\left(t_{0}-t\right)-\underbrace{T(t) A}_{=A T(t)} S\left(t_{0}-t\right)=0 .
\end{aligned}
$$

Suppose that $T(t) S\left(t_{0}-t\right)$ are not constant with respect to $t$. Then there exists $\tau \in \mathbb{R}, x \in X$ and $\varphi \in X^{\prime}$ such that $\varphi\left(\left(T(\tau) S\left(t_{0}-\tau\right) x\right) \neq \varphi\left(\left(T(0) S\left(t_{0}\right) x\right)\right.\right.$. But for arbitrary $x \in X$ and $\varphi \in X^{\prime}$ the calculation above gives $\frac{d}{d t} \varphi\left(\left(T(t) S\left(t_{0}-t\right)\right) x\right)=0$, $t \in \mathbb{R}$, hence $\varphi\left(\left(T(t) S\left(t_{0}-t\right)\right) x\right)$ is constant in $t$. Consequently, $T(t) S\left(t_{0}-t\right)$ is constant with respect to $t$ and therefore

$$
T\left(t_{0}\right)=T\left(t_{0}\right) S\left(t_{0}-t_{0}\right)=T(0) S\left(t_{0}-0\right)=S\left(t_{0}\right) .
$$

Since $t_{0} \in \mathbb{R}$ was arbitrary, the assertion is proved.
Corollary 5.15. If $X$ is a Banach space, $x_{0} \in X, A \in L(X)$ and $(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ the group generated by $A$, then $T(\cdot) x_{0}$ is the unique solution of the initial value problem

$$
x(0)=x_{0}, \quad \frac{d}{d t} x=A x, \quad t \in \mathbb{R} .
$$

Theorem 5.16 (Characterisation of uniformly continuous semigroups). Let $X$ be a Banach space and $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ a semigroup on $X$. Then $\mathcal{T}$ is uniformly continuous semigroup on $X$ if and only if there exists an $A \in L(X)$ such that $T(t)=\exp (t A), t \geq 0$. The operator $A$ is uniquely determined $\mathcal{T} ; T$ is differentiable and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d t} T(t)=A T(t)=T(t) A, \quad t \geq 0 \tag{5.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. If $A \in L(X)$, then $(\exp (t A))_{t \geq 0}$ is a uniformly continuous semigroup and satisfies (5.11) by Proposition 5.12.

Now assume that $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ is a uniformly continuous semigroup on $X$. Define

$$
\begin{equation*}
V(t):=\int_{0}^{t} T(s) \mathrm{d} s, \quad t \geq 0 \tag{5.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $T$ is continuous, we obtain

$$
\frac{1}{t} V(t)=\frac{1}{t} \int_{0}^{t} T(s) \mathrm{d} s \longrightarrow T(0)=\mathrm{id}, \quad t \searrow 0 .
$$

Hence there exists an $t_{0}$ such that $V(t)$ is boundedly invertible for all $t \in\left(0, t_{0}\right]$ (use that $V(t)$ has bounded inverse if and only if $t^{-1} V(t)$ has bounded inverse and that $\left.t^{-1} V(T)=\operatorname{id}-\left(\operatorname{id}-t^{-1} V(T)\right)\right)$.

Moreover, (5.12) shows that $V$ is continuously differentiable because for $h>0$ we have that, for $h \searrow 0$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{1}{h}(V(t+h)-V(t))=\frac{1}{h} \int_{t}^{t+h} T(s) \mathrm{d} s=T(t) \frac{1}{h} \int_{0}^{h} T(s) \mathrm{d} s \longrightarrow T(t) \\
& \frac{1}{h}(V(t-h)-V(t))=\frac{1}{h} \int_{t-h}^{t} T(s) \mathrm{d} s=T(t-h) \frac{1}{h} \int_{0}^{h} T(s) \mathrm{d} s \longrightarrow T(t) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Differentiability of $T$ follows from

$$
\begin{aligned}
T(t) & =V\left(t_{0}\right)^{-1} V\left(t_{0}\right) T(t)=V\left(t_{0}\right)^{-1} \int_{0}^{t_{0}} T(s+t) \mathrm{d} s=V\left(t_{0}\right)^{-1} \int_{t}^{t+t_{0}} T(s) \mathrm{d} s \\
& =V\left(t_{0}\right)^{-1}\left(V\left(t+t_{0}\right)-V(t)\right), \quad t \geq 0,
\end{aligned}
$$

because is $V$ differentiable. In particular, it follows that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{d}{d t} T(t) & =V\left(t_{0}\right)^{-1} \frac{d}{d t}\left(V\left(t+t_{0}\right)-V(t)\right)=V\left(t_{0}\right)^{-1}\left(T\left(t+t_{0}\right)-T(t)\right) \\
& =V\left(t_{0}\right)^{-1}\left(T\left(t_{0}\right)-\mathrm{id}\right) T(t)
\end{aligned}
$$

Obviously, the operator $A:=V\left(t_{0}\right)^{-1}\left(T\left(t_{0}\right)-\mathrm{id}\right)$ is linear and bounded. By Proposition 5.12 we get that $T(t)=\exp (t A), t \geq 0$.

Definition 5.17. Let $A$ and $\mathcal{T}$ be as in Theorem 5.16. Then $A$ is called the (infinitesimal) generator of $\mathcal{T}$.

For a semigroup $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ and its generator $A$ we have

$$
\begin{align*}
A x & =\lim _{t \searrow 0} \frac{1}{t}(T(t)-\mathrm{id}) x, & & x \in X,  \tag{5.13}\\
T(t) x & =\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{t^{n}}{n!} A^{n} x, & & x \in X, t \geq 0 . \tag{5.14}
\end{align*}
$$

## Example (Multiplication semigroups on $\mathrm{C}_{0}(\boldsymbol{\Omega})$ )

Definition 5.18. Let $\Omega \subseteq \mathbb{C}^{n}$ be a domain and $q \in C(\Omega)$. Then the operator $M_{q}$ defined by

$$
M_{q} f:=q f, \quad f \in \mathcal{D}\left(M_{q}\right):=\left\{f \in C_{0}(\Omega): q f \in C_{0}(\Omega)\right\},
$$

is the multiplication operator induced by $q$ on
$C_{0}(\Omega):=\left\{f \in C(\Omega): \forall \varepsilon>0 \quad \exists K_{\varepsilon} \subseteq \Omega\right.$ compact such that $\left.|f(\xi)|<\varepsilon, \xi \in \Omega \backslash K_{\varepsilon}\right\}$, with the norm $\|f\|=\sup \{|f(\xi)|: \xi \in \Omega\}$.

Proposition 5.19. Let $\Omega \subseteq \mathbb{C}^{n}$ be a domain and $q \in C(\Omega)$. Then the following holds:
(i) $M_{q}: \mathcal{D}\left(M_{q}\right) \subseteq C_{0}(\Omega) \rightarrow C_{0}(\Omega)$ is densely defined and closed.
(ii) $M_{q}$ is bounded $\Longleftrightarrow q$ is bounded.
(iii) $M_{q}$ is boundedly invertible $\Longleftrightarrow q$ is boundedly invertible, in this case $\left(M_{q}\right)^{-1}=M_{q^{-1}}$.
(iv) $\sigma\left(M_{q}\right)=\overline{q(\Omega)}$.

Proof. See, e.g., [EN00, Proposition I.4.2].
Definition 5.20. Let $q \in C(\Omega)$ with $\omega:=\sup \operatorname{Re}(q(\xi))<\infty$ and define $\widetilde{q}_{t}(\xi):=$ $\mathrm{e}^{t q(\xi)}, t \geq 0, \xi \in \Omega$. We denote the corresponding multiplication operator by

$$
T_{q}(t):=M_{\tilde{q_{q}}}, \quad t \geq 0
$$

Obviously $\widetilde{q}_{t} \in C(\Omega), t \geq 0$, and therefore for every tge 0 the operator $T_{q}(t)$ is a multiplication operator on $C_{0}(\Omega)$. It is clear that $\mathcal{T}_{q}=\left(T_{q}(t)\right)_{t \geq 0}$ is a semigroup on $C_{0}(\Omega)$, because for all $f \in C_{0}(\Omega), s, t \geq 0$ and $\xi \in \Omega$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(T_{q}(s) T_{q}(t) f\right)(\xi) & =\mathrm{e}^{t q(\xi)}\left(T_{q}(s) f\right)(\xi)=\mathrm{e}^{s q(\xi)} \mathrm{e}^{t q(\xi)} f(\xi)=\mathrm{e}^{(s+t) q(\xi)} f(\xi) \\
& =\left(T_{q}(s+t) f\right)(\xi),
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
\left\|T_{q}(t)\right\| \leq \mathrm{e}^{t \omega}
$$

What are necessary and sufficient conditions on $q$ such that $\mathcal{T}_{q}$ is a uniformly continuous or a strongly continuous semigroup? If $\mathcal{T}_{q}$ is uniformly continuous, what is is generator?
Proposition 5.21. With the definitions from Definition 5.20 the following is true:
(i) $\mathcal{T}_{q}$ is uniformly continuous if and only if $q$ is bounded. In this case $M_{q}$ is the generator of $\mathcal{T}_{q}$.
(ii) If $q$ is unbounded (but still $\sup \{\operatorname{Re}(q(\xi)): \xi \in \Omega\}<\infty)$, then $\mathcal{T}_{q}$ is a strongly continuous semigroup on $C_{0}(\Omega)$.
Proof. (i) Assume that $q$ is bounded. Then $M_{q}$ is unbounded and for all $t \geq 0$, $f \in C_{0}(\Omega)$ and $\xi \in \Omega$
$\left(T_{q}(t) f\right)(\xi)=\mathrm{e}^{t q(\xi)} f(\xi)=\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{t^{n} q(\xi)^{n}}{n!} f(\xi)=\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{t^{n}}{n!}\left(M_{q^{n}} f\right)(\xi)$

$$
=\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{t^{n}}{n!}\left(\left(M_{q}\right)^{n} f\right)(\xi)=\left(\left(\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{t^{n}}{n!}\left(M_{q}\right)^{n}\right) f\right)(\xi)=\left(\exp \left(t M_{q}\right) f\right)(\xi)
$$

Hence $T_{q}(t)=\exp \left(t M_{q}\right), t \geq 0$, and therefore $\mathcal{T}_{q}$ is a uniformly continuous semigroup by Theorem 5.16.
Assume that $q$ is unbounded. Then there exists a sequence $\left(\xi_{n}\right) \subseteq \Omega$ such that $\left|q\left(\xi_{n}\right)\right| \rightarrow \infty$. Let $t_{n}:=\frac{1}{\left|q\left(\xi_{n}\right)\right|}, n \in \mathbb{N}$. If $\mathcal{T}_{q}$ was uniformly continuous, then for every $\varepsilon>0$ there exists an $N \in \mathbb{N}$ such that $\left\|T\left(t_{n}\right) f-f\right\|<\varepsilon, n \geq N$ $f \in C_{0}(\Omega)$. For every $n \in \mathbb{N}$ we choose a function $f_{n} \in C_{0}(\Omega)$ such that $f_{n}\left(\xi_{n}\right)=$ and $\left\|f_{n}\right\|=1$. Define $\delta:=\max \left\{\left|\mathrm{e}^{z}-1\right| z \in \mathbb{C},|z|=1\right\}>0$. Then, for all $n \in \mathbb{N}$
$\left\|T\left(t_{n}\right) f_{n}-f_{n}\right\|=\sup \left\{\left|\mathrm{e}^{t_{n} q(\xi)} f_{n}(\xi)-f_{n}(\xi)\right|: \xi \in \Omega\right\} \geq\left|\mathrm{e}^{t_{n} q\left(\xi_{n}\right)} f_{n}\left(\xi_{n}\right)-f_{n}\left(\xi_{n}\right)\right|$

$$
=\left|\mathrm{e}^{t_{n} q\left(\xi_{n}\right)}-1\right|\left|f_{n}\left(\xi_{n}\right)\right|=\left|\mathrm{e}^{t_{n} q\left(\xi_{n}\right)}-1\right| \geq \delta
$$

hence $\mathcal{T}_{q}$ is not uniformly continuous.
(ii) Let $f \in C_{0}(\Omega)$. We have to show that $\mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow X, t \mapsto T_{q}(t) f$ is continuous. By Proposition 5.7 is suffices to show the continuity in 0 . Fix $\varepsilon>0$. By assumption there is a compact set $K_{\varepsilon} \subset \Omega$ such that

$$
|f(\xi)|<\frac{\varepsilon\|f\|}{\mathrm{e}^{|\omega|}+1}, \quad \xi \in \Omega \backslash K_{\varepsilon},
$$

where $\omega=\sup \{\operatorname{Re}(q(\xi)): \xi \in \Omega\}$. Since $K_{\varepsilon}$ is compact and $q$ is continuous, there exists a $t_{0} \in(0,1)$ such that

$$
|1-\exp (t q(\xi))|<\varepsilon, \quad t \in\left[0, t_{0}\right], \xi \in K_{\varepsilon}
$$

Hence, for all $t \in\left[0, t_{0}\right]$,
$\|T(t) f-f\|=\sup \left\{\left|\mathrm{e}^{t q(\xi)} f(\xi)-f(\xi)\right|: \xi \in \Omega\right\}$

$$
=\sup \left\{\left|\left(\mathrm{e}^{t q(\xi)}-1\right) f(\xi)\right|: \xi \in K_{\varepsilon}\right\}+\sup \left\{\left|\left(\mathrm{e}^{\operatorname{tq}(\xi)}-1\right) f(\xi)\right|: \xi \in \Omega \backslash K_{\varepsilon}\right\}
$$

$$
\leq\|f\| \sup \left\{\left|\mathrm{e}^{t q(\xi)}-1\right|: \xi \in K_{\varepsilon}\right\}+\frac{\varepsilon\|f\|}{\mathrm{e}^{|\omega|}+1} \sup \left\{\left|\mathrm{e}^{t q(\xi)}-1\right|: \xi \in \Omega \backslash K_{\varepsilon}\right\}
$$

$$
<\varepsilon\|f\|+\varepsilon\|f\|=2 \varepsilon\|f\|
$$

### 5.4 Strongly continuous semigroups

In chapter 5.2 we already saw: If $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ is a semigroup on a Banach space $X$, then
$\mathcal{T}$ uniformly continuous $\Longleftrightarrow T(t)=\exp (t A)$ for some $A \in L(X)$ and all $t \geq 0$.
Moreover, $T$ is differentiable and $\frac{d}{d t} T(0)=A$.
Now we use the latter property to assign a uniquely defined generator to strongly continuous semigroups.
Definition 5.22. Let $X$ be a Banach space and $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ a strongly continuous semigroup on $X$. The operator $A$, defined by

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{D}(A) & :=\left\{x \in X: \lim _{h \searrow 0} \frac{1}{h}(T(h) x-x) \text { exists }\right\}, \\
A x & :=\lim _{h \searrow 0} \frac{1}{h}(T(h) x-x), \quad x \in \mathcal{D}(A)
\end{aligned}
$$

is called the (infinitesimal) generator or $\mathcal{T}$.
Remark. If $\mathcal{T}$ is a uniformly continuous semigroup, then this definition coincides with the definition of the generator in Definition 5.20.

Lemma 5.23. Let $X$ be a Banach space and $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ strongly continuous semigroup on $X$. For $x \in X$ we define the map $\tau_{x}: \mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow X, t \mapsto \tau_{x}(t)=T(t) x$. Then the following is equivalent.
(i) $\tau_{x}$ is differentiable.
(ii) $\tau_{x}$ is differentiable in 0 .

In this case $\dot{\tau}_{x}(t)=T\left(t_{0}\right) \dot{\tau}_{x}(0)$.
Proof. (i) $\Rightarrow$ (ii) is clear.
(ii) $\Rightarrow$ (i) Let $t_{0}>0, h \in\left(0, t_{0}\right)$ and $x \in X$ such $\tau_{x}$ is differentiable in 0 . The differentiability from the right of $\tau_{x}$ in $t_{0}$ follows from
$\frac{1}{h}\left(\tau_{x}\left(t_{0}+h\right)-\tau_{x}\left(t_{0}\right)\right)=T\left(t_{0}\right) \frac{1}{h}\left(\tau_{x}(h)-\tau_{x}(0)\right) \longrightarrow T\left(t_{0}\right) \frac{d}{d t} \tau_{x}(0), \quad h \rightarrow 0$.
Differentiability from the left of $\tau_{x}$ in $t_{0}$ follows from

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{1}{h}\left(\tau_{x}\left(t_{0}\right)-\tau_{x}\left(t_{0}-h\right)\right) \\
& \quad=T\left(t_{0}-h\right)\left(\frac{1}{h}\left(\tau_{x}(h)-\tau_{x}(0)\right)-\frac{d}{d t} \tau_{x}(0)\right)+T\left(t_{0}-h\right) \frac{d}{d t} \tau_{x}(0) \\
& \quad \longrightarrow T\left(t_{0}\right) \frac{d}{d t} \tau_{x}(0), \quad h \rightarrow 0,
\end{aligned}
$$

because the first term converges to 0 (since $T\left(t_{0}-h\right.$ ) is bounded uniformly bounded for $h \in\left(0, t_{0}\right)$ and the term in brackets tends to 0 by hypothesis).
Corollary 5.24. If $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ is a strongly continuous semigroup on a Banach space $X$ with generator $A$, then

$$
\mathcal{D}(A)=\{x \in X: t \mapsto T(t) x \text { is differentiable }\}
$$

Proposition 5.25. Let $X$ be a Banach space and $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ strongly continuous semigroup on $X$ with generator $A$. Then the following holds:
(i) $A$ is a linear operator.
(ii) If $x \in \mathcal{D}(A)$, then $T(t) x \in \mathcal{D}(A)$ for all $t \geq 0$ and the map $\tau_{x}: \mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow X, t \mapsto$ $T(t) x$ is differentiable with derivative

$$
\frac{d}{d t} T(t) x=A T(t) x=T(t) A x, \quad t \geq 0
$$

(iii) If $t \geq 0$ and $x \in X$, then $\int_{0}^{t} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s \in \mathcal{D}(A)$.
(iv) If $t \geq 0$, then

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
T(t) x-x=A \int_{0}^{t} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s, & x \in X, \\
T(t) x-x=\int_{0}^{t} T(s) A x \mathrm{~d} s, & x \in \mathcal{D}(A) . \tag{5.16}
\end{array}
$$

Proof. (i) is clear.
(ii) If $x \in \mathcal{D}(A)$, then $\tau_{x}$ is differentiable with $\frac{d}{d t} \tau_{x}(0)=A x$ and $\frac{d}{d t} T(t) x=$ $\frac{d}{d t} \tau_{x}(t)=T(t) \frac{d}{d t} \tau(0)=T(t) A x$. Hence also

$$
\lim _{h \searrow 0} \frac{1}{h}(T(h) T(t) x-T(t) x)=\lim _{h \searrow 0} \frac{1}{h}(T(t+h) x-T(t) x)=T(t) A x
$$

exists and consequently $T(t) x \in \mathcal{D}(A)$ and $A T(t) x=T(t) A x$.

$$
\text { (iii) and (5.15): Let } t \geq 0, h>0 \text { and } x \in X \text {. The assertions follow from }
$$

$$
\begin{array}{r}
\frac{1}{h}\left(T(h) \int_{0}^{t} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s-\int_{0}^{t} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s\right)=\frac{1}{h}\left(\int_{h}^{t+h} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s-\int_{0}^{t} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s\right) \\
=\frac{1}{h}\left(\int_{t}^{t+h} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s-\int_{0}^{h} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s\right) \longrightarrow T(t) x-T(0) x, \quad h \rightarrow 0
\end{array}
$$

(iv) and (5.16): Let $x \in \mathcal{D}(A), t \geq 0$ and $h>0$. Define

$$
\varphi_{h}:[0, t] \rightarrow X, \quad \varphi_{h}(s)=T(s) \frac{T(h) x-x}{h}
$$

Then $\varphi_{h}$ converges uniformly to $T(\cdot) A x$ on $[0, t]$ for $h \rightarrow 0$. Hence we obtain $A \int_{0}^{t} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s=\lim _{h \searrow 0} \frac{1}{h}(T(h)-\mathrm{id}) \int_{0}^{t} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s=\lim _{h \searrow 0} \int_{0}^{t} \frac{1}{h}(T(h)-\mathrm{id}) T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s$

$$
=\lim _{h \searrow 0} \int_{0}^{t} \varphi_{h}(s) \mathrm{d} s=\int_{0}^{t} \lim _{h \searrow 0} \varphi_{h}(s) \mathrm{d} s=\int_{0}^{t} T(s) A x \mathrm{~d} s
$$

Recall that the semigroup $\mathcal{T}$ determines uniquely its generator $A$ (see Definition 5.22). Now we will show that the generator $A$ determines uniquely the corresponding semigroup $\mathcal{T}$.

Proposition 5.26. Let $X$ be a Banach space, $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ a strongly continuous semigroup and $A$ its generator. Then $\mathcal{D}(A) \subseteq X$ is dense, $A$ is closed and $A$ determines the semigroup $\mathcal{T}$ uniquely.
Proof. Since for every $x \in X$ the map $\mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow X, t \mapsto T(t) x$ is continuous, 5.25 shows

$$
\mathcal{D}(A) \ni \frac{1}{t} \int_{0}^{t} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s \longrightarrow x, \quad t \searrow 0
$$

Hence we proved that $\overline{\mathcal{D}(A)}=X$.
Given a sequence $\left(x_{n}\right)_{n} \subseteq \mathcal{D}(A)$ and $x, y \in X$ such that $x_{n} \rightarrow x$ and $A x_{n} \rightarrow y$ for $n \rightarrow \infty$, we have to show that $x \in \mathcal{D}(A)$ and $A x=y$. Note that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{1}{t}(T(t) x-x) & =\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{t}\left(T(t) x_{n}-x_{n}\right) \stackrel{(5.16)}{=} \lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} \int_{0}^{t} T(s) A x_{n} \mathrm{~d} s \\
& \stackrel{(\not)}{=} \int_{0}^{t} \lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} T(s) A x_{n} \mathrm{~d} s \stackrel{(+)}{=} \int_{0}^{t} T(s) y \mathrm{~d} s,
\end{aligned}
$$

where (*) holds because the map $[0, t] \rightarrow X, s \mapsto T(s) A x_{n}$ converges uniformly to $s \mapsto T(s) y$, and (+) follows because $T(s)$ is closed. Hence, by definition of $A$ $x \in \mathcal{D}(A)$ and

$$
A x=\lim _{t \searrow 0} \frac{1}{t}(T(t) x-x)=\lim _{t \searrow 0} \frac{1}{t} \int_{0}^{t} T(s) y \mathrm{~d} s=y
$$

Let $\mathcal{S}=(S(t))_{t \geq 0}$ be a strongly continuous semigroup with generator $A$. We have to show that $S(t)=T(t), t \geq 0$. For $x \in \mathcal{D}(A)$ and $t>0$ we define $\eta:[0, t] \rightarrow$ $X, \eta(s):=T(t-s) S(s) x$ (cf. the proof of Proposition 5.14). The function $\eta$ is differentiable because for $s \in(0, t)$ and small enough $|h|$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{1}{h}(\eta(s+h)-\eta(s))=\frac{1}{h}(T(t-s-h) S(s+h) x-T(t-s) S(s) x) \\
& \quad=\underbrace{T(t-s-h)}_{\text {unif. bdd. w.r.t. } h} \frac{1}{h}(S(s+h) x-S(s) x)+\frac{1}{h}(T(t-s-h)-T(t-s)) \underbrace{S(s) x}_{\in \mathcal{D}(A)} \\
& \quad \longrightarrow T(t-s) A S(s) x-T(t-s) A S(s) x=0
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore $\eta$ is constant on $[0, t]$ and it follows that

$$
T(t) x=\eta(0)=\eta(t)=S(t) x .
$$

Since $T(t)$ and $S(t)$ are bounded and $\mathcal{D}(A)$ is dense in $X$, we obtain $T(t)=S(t) . \quad \square$

Remark. Let $X$ be a Banach space and $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ a strongly continuous semigroup on $X$ with generator $A$. A classical solution of

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d t} x=A x(t), \quad t \geq 0, \quad x(0)=x_{0} \tag{5.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

is a map $u: \mathbb{R}_{+} \rightarrow X$ which is continuously differentiable, $u(t) \in \mathcal{D}(A)$ for all $t \geq 0$, and $u$ solves the initial value problem (5.17). For an initial value $x_{0} \in \mathcal{D}(A)$, the unique classical solution of (5.17) is $T(\cdot) x_{0}$. For $k \in \mathbb{N}$ and $x_{0} \in \mathcal{D}\left(A^{k}\right)$ we have

$$
T(\cdot) x_{0} \in C^{k}([0, \infty), X) \cap C^{k-1}([0, \infty), \mathcal{D}(A))
$$

Lemma 5.27 (Scaling). Let $X$ be a Banach space and $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ a strongly continuous semigroup on $X$ with generator $A$. For every $\lambda \in \mathbb{C}$ and $\alpha>0$, the family $\mathcal{S}=(S(t))_{t \geq 0}$ defined by $S(t)=\mathrm{e}^{t \lambda} T(\alpha t)$ is a strongly continuous semigroup on $X$ with generator $B=\alpha A+\lambda \mathrm{id}$.

Proof. Straightforward computation.
Theorem 5.28. Let $X$ be a Banach space and $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t>0}$ a strongly continuous semigroup on $X$ with generator $A$. Choose $\omega \in \mathbb{R}$ and $M \geq 1$ such that $\|T(t)\| \leq$ $M \mathrm{e}^{\omega t}, t \geq 0$ (cf. Proposition 5.7). Then the following holds:
(i) Fix $\lambda \in \mathbb{C}$. If for all $x \in X$ the improper integral

$$
\begin{equation*}
R(\lambda) x:=\int_{0}^{\infty} \mathrm{e}^{-s \lambda} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s \tag{5.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

exists, then $\lambda \in \rho(A)$ and $R(\lambda)=R(\lambda, A)$.
(ii) If $\lambda \in \mathbb{C}$ with $\operatorname{Re}(\lambda)>\omega$, then $\lambda \in \rho(A)$ and $R(\lambda)=R(\lambda, A)$ and we have the estimates

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\|(\lambda-A)^{-1}\right\| & \leq \frac{M}{\operatorname{Re}(\lambda)-\omega}  \tag{5.19}\\
\left\|(\lambda-A)^{-n}\right\| & \leq \frac{M}{(\operatorname{Re}(\lambda)-\omega)^{n}}, \quad n \in \mathbb{N}
\end{align*}
$$

Proof. (i) Without restriction we can assume that $\lambda=0$ (otherwise we rescale according to Lemma 5.27).
First we show that $\operatorname{rg}(R(0)) \subseteq \mathcal{D}(A)$ and $A R(0) x=-x$ for all $x \in X$. This follows from the definition of $A$ and

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{1}{h}(T(h)-\mathrm{id}) R(0) x & =\frac{1}{h}(T(h)-\mathrm{id}) \int_{0}^{\infty} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s \\
& =\frac{1}{h} \int_{0}^{\infty} T(s+h) x \mathrm{~d} s-\frac{1}{h} \int_{0}^{\infty} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s \\
& =-\frac{1}{h} \int_{0}^{h} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s \longrightarrow-x, \quad \text { for } h \searrow 0
\end{aligned}
$$

Now we show that $R(0) A x=-x$ for all $x \in \mathcal{D}(A)$. We compute for $x \in \mathcal{D}(A)$

$$
R(0) A x=\lim _{t \rightarrow \infty} \int_{0}^{t} T(s) A x \mathrm{~d} s \stackrel{(1)}{=} \lim _{t \rightarrow \infty} A \int_{0}^{t} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s \stackrel{(2)}{=} A \lim _{t \rightarrow \infty} \int_{0}^{t} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s
$$

$$
=A R(0) x=-x
$$

Note that (1) follows from Proposition 5.25 (iv) and (2) holds because $A$ is closed.
(ii) Let $\lambda \in \mathbb{C}$ with $\operatorname{Re}(\lambda)>\omega$. By (i) it suffices to show that $R(\lambda) x$ exists for all $x \in X$. This and the estimate (5.19) hold because for all $t \geq 0$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|\int_{0}^{t} \mathrm{e}^{-s \lambda} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s\right\| & \leq \int_{0}^{t}\left\|\mathrm{e}^{-s \lambda} T(s) x\right\| \mathrm{d} s \leq M\|x\| \int_{0}^{t}\left|\mathrm{e}^{-s \lambda}\right| \mathrm{e}^{s \omega} \mathrm{~d} s \\
& \leq M\|x\| \int_{0}^{t} \mathrm{e}^{s(\omega-\operatorname{Re}(\lambda)} \mathrm{d} s=M\|x\| \frac{1-\mathrm{e}^{t(\omega-\operatorname{Re}(\lambda))}}{\operatorname{Re}(\lambda)-\omega} \\
& \leq \frac{M\|x\|}{\operatorname{Re}(\lambda)-\omega}
\end{aligned}
$$

Now let $n \geq 2$. Using the von Neumann series, we have

$$
(R(\lambda, A))^{n}=(\lambda-A)^{-n}=\frac{(-)^{n}}{(n-1)!} \frac{\mathrm{d}^{n-1}}{\mathrm{~d} \lambda^{n-1}}(\lambda-A)^{-1}
$$

hence, with (5.18),

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|(R(\lambda, A))^{n}\right\| & =\frac{1}{(n-1)!}\left\|\frac{\mathrm{d}^{n-1}}{\mathrm{~d} \lambda^{n-1}} \int_{0}^{\infty} \mathrm{e}^{-s \lambda} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s\right\| \\
& =\frac{1}{(n-1)!}\left\|\int_{0}^{\infty} s^{n-1} \mathrm{e}^{-s \lambda} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s\right\| \\
& \leq \frac{M\|x\|}{(n-1)!} \int_{0}^{\infty} s^{n-1} \mathrm{e}^{s(\omega-\operatorname{Re}(\lambda))} \mathrm{d} s=\frac{M\|x\|}{(\operatorname{Re}(\lambda)-\omega)^{n}} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Theorem 5.28 shows that the spectrum of a generator always lies in a left semi-plane of the complex plane.

Definition 5.29. - If the integral in (5.18) exists, then it is called the Laplace transform of $T(\cdot) x$.

- If $A$ is the generator of a strongly continuous semigroup $\mathcal{T}$, then

$$
s(A):=\sup \{\operatorname{Re}(\lambda): \lambda \in \sigma(A)\} .
$$

is called the spectral bound of $A$
If $A$ is the generator of a strongly continuous semigroup $\mathcal{T}$, then

$$
-\infty \leq s(A) \leq \omega_{0}(\mathcal{T})<\infty .
$$

Indeed, if $\operatorname{Re}(\lambda)>\omega$ then $\lambda \in \rho(A)$ by Theorem 5.28, so the spectral bound must be less or equal to $\omega$.

Example 5.30 (Multiplication semigroup). Let $\Omega \in \mathbb{C}$ be a domain and $q \in$ $C(\Omega, \mathbb{C})$ such that $\omega:=\sup \{\operatorname{Re}(q(\xi)): \xi \in \Omega\}<\infty$. Then

$$
T_{q}(t):=M_{t \mathrm{eq} q}, \quad t \geq 0
$$

defines a strongly continuous semigroup $\mathcal{T}_{q}=\left(T_{q}(t)\right)_{t \geq 0}$ on $X=C_{0}(\Omega)$, see Proposition 5.21.

Now we show that the generator of $\mathcal{T}_{q}$ is the multiplication operator $M_{q}$.
Proof. Let $A$ be the generator of $\mathcal{T}_{q}$. Then, for all $f \in \mathcal{D}(A)$ and $\xi \in \Omega$,

$$
(A f)(\xi)=\lim _{h>0} \frac{\mathrm{e}^{h q(\xi)} f(\xi)-f(\xi)}{h}=f(\xi) \lim _{h \searrow 0} \frac{\mathrm{e}^{h q(\xi)}-1}{h}=f(\xi) q(\xi)=\left(M_{q} f\right)(\xi)
$$

This proves that $A \subseteq M_{q}$. Observe that $\lambda \in \rho(A) \cap \rho\left(M_{q}\right)$ for large enough $\lambda$ by assumption. Therefore we also have $M_{q} \subseteq A$.

### 5.5 Generator theorems

Proposition 5.26 and Theorem 5.28 give necessary conditions for a linear operator to be generator of a strongly continuous semigroup. It must be densely defined, its spectrum must lie in a left half-plane of $\mathbb{C}$ and the powers of the resolvent must satisfy certain estimates. Now we show that this is sufficient.
Theorem 5.31 (Hille-Yosida-Phillips). For a Banach space $X, A(X \rightarrow X)$ a densely defined linear operator and constants $M \geq 1, \omega \in \mathbb{R}$ the following is equivalent:
(i) A generates a strongly continuous semigroup $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ on $X$ with

$$
\|T(t)\| \leq M \mathrm{e}^{t \omega}, \quad t \geq 0
$$

(ii) $A$ is densely defined and closed, $\{\lambda \in \mathbb{R}: \lambda>\omega\} \subseteq \rho(A)$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|R(\lambda, A)^{n}\right\| \leq \frac{M}{(\lambda-\omega)^{n}}, \quad n \in \mathbb{N}, \lambda>\omega \tag{5.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

(iii) $A$ is densely defined and closed, $\{\lambda \in \mathbb{C}: \operatorname{Re} \lambda>\omega\} \subseteq \rho(A)$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|R(\lambda, A)^{n}\right\| \leq \frac{M}{(\operatorname{Re} \lambda-\omega)^{n}}, \quad n \in \mathbb{N}, \operatorname{Re} \lambda>\omega . \tag{5.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

The idea of the proof is to approximate the operator $A$ by bounded operators. For $n \in \mathbb{N}, n>\omega$ define the so-called Yosida approximants

$$
A_{n}:=n A R(n, A)=n^{2} R(n, A)-n .
$$

Lemma 5.32. Let $X$ be a Banach space and $A(X \rightarrow X)$ a densely defined linear operator. Assume that there are $\omega \in \mathbb{R}$ and $M \geq 1$ such that (ii) from Theorem 5.31 is satisfied. For $\lambda>\omega$ let $A_{\lambda}:=\lambda A R(\lambda, A)$ as in (5.23). Then $A_{\lambda} \in L(X)$ for all $\lambda>\omega$ and

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\lim _{\lambda \rightarrow \infty} \lambda R(\lambda, A) x=x, & x \in X, \\
\lim _{\lambda \rightarrow \infty} A_{\lambda} x=A x, & x \in \mathcal{D}(A) . \tag{5.25}
\end{array}
$$

Proof. $A_{\lambda}$ is bounded because

$$
A_{\lambda}=\lambda(A-\lambda+\lambda)(\lambda-A)^{-1}=\lambda^{2}(\lambda-A)^{-1}-\lambda
$$

Observe that $\|\lambda R(\lambda, A)\| \leq \frac{|\lambda| M}{\lambda-\omega}$, so $\lambda R(\lambda, A)$ is uniformly bounded in the interval $(\omega+1, \infty)$ (i. e., there is a $c \in \mathbb{R}$ such that $\|\lambda R(\lambda, A)\| \leq c$ for all $\lambda>\omega+1$ ). Since $\mathcal{D}(A)$ is dense in $X$, is suffices to prove (5.24) $x \in \mathcal{D}$. For such $x$ we find

$$
\|\lambda R(\lambda, A) x-x\|=\|R(\lambda, A) A x\| \leq \frac{M}{\lambda-\omega}\|A x\| \longrightarrow 0, \quad \lambda \rightarrow \infty .
$$

From (5.24) we obtain for $x \in \mathcal{D}(A)$
$\lim _{\lambda \rightarrow \infty} A_{\lambda} x=\lim _{\lambda \rightarrow \infty} \lambda A R(\lambda, A) x=\lim _{\lambda \rightarrow \infty} \lambda R(\lambda, A) A x=A x$.

Proof of 5.31. (i) $\Rightarrow$ (iii) follows from Proposition 5.26 and Theorem 5.28.
(iii) $\Rightarrow$ (ii) is obvious.
(ii) $\Rightarrow$ (i) Let $\mathbb{N}_{>\omega}:=\{n \in \mathbb{N}: n>\omega\}$. For $n \in \mathbb{N}_{>\omega}$ let $\mathcal{T}_{n}=\left(T_{n}(t)\right)_{t>0}$ be the uniformly continuous semigroup generated by $A_{n}$. We will show that $T_{n}(t)$ converges strongly to some $T(t) \in L(X)$ for $n \rightarrow \infty$ and that $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ is a strongly continuous semigroup with generator $A$.
Step 1: Estimate for $\left\|T_{n}(t)\right\|$.
For $t \geq 0, n \in \mathbb{N}_{>\omega}$ and $\omega_{1}:=\sup \left\{\frac{n|\omega|}{(n-\omega)}: n \in \mathbb{N}_{>\omega}\right\}<\infty$ we obtain
$\left\|T_{n}(t)\right\|=\mathrm{e}^{-t n}\left\|\mathrm{e}^{t n^{2} R(n, A)}\right\| \leq \mathrm{e}^{-t n} \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \frac{t^{j} n^{2 j}}{j!}\left\|R(n, A)^{j}\right\|$
$\leq M \mathrm{e}^{-t n} \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} \frac{t^{j} n^{2 j}}{(n-\omega)^{j} j!}=M \mathrm{e}^{-t n} \mathrm{e}^{t n^{2} /(n-\omega)}=M \mathrm{e}^{n t \omega /(n-\omega)} \leq M \mathrm{e}^{t \omega_{1}}$.
Step 2: Using the series representations we easily see that $T_{n}(t) A_{m}=A_{m} T_{n}(t)$ for all $m, n \in \mathbb{N}_{>\omega}$ and $t \geq 0$. Proposition 5.25 (ii) yields

$$
\begin{aligned}
T_{n}(t) x-T_{m}(t) x & =\int_{0}^{t} \frac{d}{d s}\left(T_{n}(s) T_{m}(t-s) x\right) \mathrm{d} s \\
& =\int_{0}^{t} T_{n}(s) T_{m}(t-s)\left(A_{n} x-A_{m} x\right) \mathrm{d} s .
\end{aligned}
$$

For $x \in \mathcal{D}(A)$ we use the estimate from Step 1 and formula 5.25 to obtain for $t \geq 0$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|T_{n}(t) x-T_{m}(t) x\right\| \leq M^{2}\left\|A_{n} x-A_{m} x\right\| \int_{0}^{t} \mathrm{e}^{2 s \omega_{1}} \mathrm{~d} s \longrightarrow 0, \quad n, m \rightarrow \infty \tag{5.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

Step 3: For all $y \in X$ there exists $T(t) y:=\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} T_{n}(t) y$ where the convergence is uniform on intervals $\left[0, t_{0}\right]$ with $t_{0}>0$. In addition, $T(\cdot) y \in C\left(\left[0, t_{0}\right], X\right)$. (To keep notation simple, we write $T(\cdot)$ instead $\left.T(\cdot)\right|_{\left[0, t_{0}\right]}$, etc.)
Fix $y \in X$ and $\varepsilon>0$. Since $\mathcal{D}(A)$ is dense in $\subseteq X$, there exists an $x \in \mathcal{D}(A)$ such that $\|x-y\|<\varepsilon$. On finite intervals $\left[0, t_{0}\right]$, convergence in (5.26) is uniform with respect to $t$, hence there exists an $N \in \mathbb{N}>\omega$ with $\left\|T_{n}(t) x-T_{m}(t) x\right\|<\varepsilon$ for all $n, m \geq N$ and $t \in\left[0, t_{0}\right]$. Consequently, for $n, m \geq N$ and $t \in\left[0, t_{0}\right]$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|T_{n}(t) y-T_{m}(t) y\right\| & \leq\left\|T_{n}(t) x-T_{m}(t) x\right\|+\left\|T_{m}(t)(y-x)\right\|+\left\|T_{n}(t)(y-x)\right\| \\
& \leq \varepsilon+\left(\left\|T_{m}(t)\right\|+\left\|T_{n}(t)\right\|\right)\|x-y\| \leq\left(1+2 M \mathrm{e}^{t_{0 \omega_{1}}}\right) \varepsilon .
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence, for arbitrary $y \in X,\left(T_{n}(\cdot) y\right)_{n}$ is a Cauchy sequence in $C\left(\left[0, t_{0}\right], X\right)$, and therefore it has a limit $T(\cdot) y \in C\left(\left[0, t_{0}\right], X\right)$. Obviously, $T(t) y$ is independent of the choice of $t_{0}>t$, so we obtain a function $T(\cdot) y$ which is well-defined on all of $\mathbb{R}_{+}$. Step 4: $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ is a strongly continuous semigroup and $\|T(t)\| \leq M \mathrm{e}^{t \omega}$, $t \geq 0$.

Strong continuity of $\mathcal{T}$ was proved in Step 3. The semigroup property follows because on bounded intervals, $\mathcal{T}$ is the uniform strong limit of semigroups.

$$
\|T(t)\|=\left\|\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} T_{n}(t)\right\| \leq \lim _{n \rightarrow \infty} M \mathrm{e}^{t n \omega /(n-\omega)} \leq M \mathrm{e}^{t \omega}, \quad t \geq 0
$$

Step 5: $A$ is the generator of $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$.
Let $B$ be the generator of $\mathcal{T}$. For $x \in \mathcal{D}(A)$ and $t_{0}>0, T_{n}(\cdot) x$ converges to $T(\cdot) x$ for $n \rightarrow \infty$, where the convergence is uniform on bounded intervals $\left[0, t_{0}\right]$. Since $A_{n} x-$ $A x$ and $T_{n} \rightarrow T$ uniformly on $\left[0, t_{0}\right]$ for $n \rightarrow \infty$, also $\frac{d}{d t} T_{n}(\cdot) x=T_{n}(\cdot) A_{n} x$ converges to $T(\cdot) A x$, uniformly on $\left[0, t_{0}\right]$. Hence $T(\cdot) x$ is differentiable and $\frac{d}{d t} T(t) x=T(t) A x$ $t \in\left[0, t_{0}\right]$, implying that $x \in \mathcal{D}(B)$ and $B x=\frac{d}{d t} T(0) x=T(0) A x=A x$. This shows $A \subseteq B$. For every $\lambda>\omega$ we have $\lambda \in \rho(A) \cap \rho(B)$, hence also $R(\lambda, A) \subseteq R(\lambda, B)$ From $\mathcal{D}(R(\lambda, A))=X=\mathcal{D}(R(\lambda, B))$ it follows that $R(\lambda, A)=R(\lambda, B)$, so $A=$
$B$. $B$.

We immediately obtain the following corollary for contraction groups.
Corollary 5.33 (Hille-Yosida). For a Banach space $X$ and a linear operator $A$ on $X$ the following is equivalent:
(i) A generates a strongly continuous contraction semigroup $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ on $X$, that is,

$$
\|T(t)\| \leq 1, \quad t \geq 0
$$

(ii) $A$ is densely defined and closed, $\{\lambda \in \mathbb{R}: \lambda>0\} \subseteq \rho(A)$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|R(\lambda, A)\| \leq \frac{1}{\lambda}, \quad \lambda>0 \tag{5.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

(iii) $A$ is densely defined and closed, $\{\lambda \in \mathbb{C}: \operatorname{Re} \lambda>0\} \subseteq \rho(A)$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|R(\lambda, A)\| \leq \frac{1}{\operatorname{Re} \lambda}, \quad \operatorname{Re} \lambda>0 \tag{5.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. The assertion follows with $M=1$ and $\omega=0$ from theorem 5.31 because $\left\|R(\lambda, A)^{n}\right\| \leq\|R(\lambda, A)\|^{n} \leq \frac{1}{\operatorname{Re}(\lambda)^{n}}$.

## Generator of strongly continuous groups

Definition 5.34. Let $\mathcal{S}=(S(t))_{t \in \mathbb{R}}$ strongly continuous group on a Banach space $X$. The operator $A$, defined by

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{D}(A) & :=\left\{x \in X: \lim _{h \rightarrow 0} \frac{1}{h}(S(h) x-x) \text { exists }\right\} \\
A x & :=\lim _{h \rightarrow 0} \frac{1}{h}(S(h) x-x), \quad x \in \mathcal{D}(A)
\end{aligned}
$$

is called the (infinitesimal) generator of $\mathcal{S}$.
Obviously $\mathcal{T}_{+}=\left(T_{+}(t)\right)_{t \geq 0}$ and $\mathcal{T}_{-}=\left(T_{-}(t)\right)_{t \geq 0}$ with $T_{+}(t)=S(t)$ and $T_{-}(t)=$ $S(-t), t \geq 0$ are strongly continuous semigroups on $X$ with generator $\pm A$.

Theorem 5.35 (Generator theorem for strongly continuous groups). Let $X$ be a Banach space, $A$ a linear operator on $X, M \geq 1$ and $\omega \in \mathbb{R}$. Then the following is equivalent:
(i) A generates a strongly continuous group $\mathcal{S}=(S(t))_{t \in \mathbb{R}}$ on $X$ with

$$
\|S(t)\| \leq M \mathrm{e}^{|t| \omega}, \quad t \in \mathbb{R} .
$$

(ii) $A$ is densely defined and closed, $\{\lambda \in \mathbb{R}: \lambda>\omega\} \subseteq \rho(A)$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|R(\lambda, A)^{n}\right\| \leq \frac{M}{(|\lambda|-\omega)^{n}}, \quad n \in \mathbb{N},|\lambda|>\omega \tag{5.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

(iii) $A$ is densely defined and closed, $\{\lambda \in \mathbb{C}: \operatorname{Re} \lambda>\omega\} \subseteq \rho(A)$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|R(\lambda, A)^{n}\right\| \leq \frac{M}{(|\operatorname{Re} \lambda|-\omega)^{n}}, \quad n \in \mathbb{N},|\operatorname{Re} \lambda|>\omega \tag{5.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

(iv) $A$ and $-A$ generate strongly continuous semigroups $\mathcal{T}_{ \pm}=\left(T_{ \pm}(t)\right)_{t \geq 0}$ with

$$
\left\|T_{ \pm}(t)\right\| \leq M \mathrm{e}^{t \omega}, \quad t \geq 0
$$

Proof. Exercise ??.
We saw in Theorem 5.31 that the generator $A$ of a strongly continuous semigroup necessarily is densely defined. It this is not the case but all other assumptions of the Hille-Yosida-Phillip theorem (Theorem 5.31 (ii) and (iii) respectively) are satisfied, then the restriction of $A$ to an appropriate subspace is generator of strongly continuous semigroup. This semigroup is then defined only on a subspace of the original Banach space $X$.

Definition 5.36. Let $X$ be a Banach space and $X_{0} \subseteq X$ a subspace. For a linear operator $A$ with domain $\mathcal{D}(A) \subseteq X$ (not necessarily dense in $X$ ) we define the part of $A$ in $X_{0}$ by

$$
\mathcal{D}\left(A_{\mid}\right)=\left\{x \in \mathcal{D}(A) \cap X_{0}: A x \in X_{0}\right\}, \quad A_{\mid} x=A x, \quad x \in \mathcal{D}\left(A_{\mid}\right) .
$$

Lemma 5.37. Let $X$ be a Banach space, $A: \mathcal{D}(A) \subseteq X \rightarrow X$ a closed linear operator on $X$ (not necessarily densely defined). Let $X_{0}:=\overline{\mathcal{D}(A)}$ and $A_{\mid}$be the part of $A$ in $X_{0}$. If there exist $M \geq 1$ and $\omega \in \mathbb{R}$ such that

$$
\{\lambda \in \mathbb{R}: \lambda>\omega\} \subseteq \rho(A) \quad \text { and } \quad\left\|R(\lambda, A)^{n}\right\| \leq \frac{M}{(\lambda-\omega)^{n}}, \quad n \in \mathbb{N}, \lambda>\omega,
$$

then $A_{\|}$is the generator of a strongly continuous semigroup $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t>0}$ on $X_{0}$ with $\|T(t)\| \leq M \mathrm{e}^{t \omega}, t \geq 0$.

Proof. By assumption, $X_{0}$ is a Banach space. Note that $R(\lambda, A)\left(X_{0}\right) \subseteq \mathcal{D}\left(A_{\mid}\right)$ for $\lambda \in \rho(A)$ because $\mathcal{D}\left(A_{\mid}\right)=\left\{x \in \mathcal{D}(A): A x \in X_{0}\right\}$. Consequently, $\rho(A) \subseteq$ $\rho\left(A_{\mid}\right)$and $R\left(\lambda, A_{\mid}\right) \subseteq R(\lambda, A)$ for all $\lambda \in \rho(A)$. Hence, for $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and $\lambda>\omega$ we obtain $\left\|R\left(\lambda, A_{1}\right)^{n}\right\| \leq\left\|R(\lambda, A)^{n}\right\|$. Therefore, by the Hille-Yosida-Phillips theoren ${ }_{x \in X_{0}} 5.31$ ), it suffices to prove that $\mathcal{D}\left(A_{\mid}\right)$is deon $x \in X_{0}$ and define $x_{n}=n R(n, A) x$ for $n \in \mathbb{N}$ and $n>\omega$. Observe that, because $x \in X_{0}$,

$$
A x_{n}=n A R(n, A) x=n(n R(n, A)-x) \in X_{0}
$$

hence $x_{n} \in \mathcal{D}\left(A_{\mid}\right)$. Lemma 5.32 shows that $x_{n} \rightarrow x, n \rightarrow \infty$, so the lemma is proved.

## Examples 5.38.

1. Translation semigroup on $\operatorname{BUC}(\mathbb{R})$

Let $X=B U C(\mathbb{R})$ and $A$ be the linear operator on $X$ be defined by

$$
\mathcal{D}(A)=\left\{f \in X: f \in C^{1}(\mathbb{R}), f^{\prime} \in X\right\}, \quad A f=f^{\prime} .
$$

Then $A$ generates the translation semigroup $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ with $(T(t) f)(\xi)=$ $f(t+\xi)$ for all $t \geq 0, f \in X$ and $\xi \in \mathbb{R}$.

Proof. (i) $A$ is densely defined: Fix $f \in X$ and define (cf. proof of Theorem 5.16)

$$
f_{t}(\xi)=\frac{1}{t} \int_{0}^{t} f(\xi+s) \mathrm{d} s, \quad t>0, \xi \in \mathbb{R}
$$

Obviously, $f_{t}$ is continuous and $\left\|f_{t}\right\| \leq \frac{1}{t} \int_{0}^{t}\|f\| \mathrm{d} s=\|f\|<\infty$. Moreover, $f_{t}$ is uniformly continuous. To see this, fix $\varepsilon>0$. Since $f$ is uniformly continuous, there exits $\delta>0$ such that $|f(\xi)-f(\eta)|<\varepsilon$ if $|\xi-\eta|<\delta$. Hence, for $\xi, \eta \in \mathbb{R}$ with $|\xi-\eta|<\delta$, it follows that

$$
\left|f_{t}(\xi)-f_{t}(\eta)\right| \leq \frac{1}{t} \int_{0}^{t}|f(\xi+s)-f(\eta+s)| \mathrm{d} s \leq \varepsilon
$$

Clearly $f_{t} \in X, t>0$ and every $f_{t}$ is continuously differentiable with derivative $f_{t}^{\prime}(\xi)=\frac{1}{t}(f(t+\xi)-f(\xi))$, hence we obtain $f_{t} \in \mathcal{D}(A), t>0$. Finally we show that $f_{t} \rightarrow f$ for $t \searrow 0$. Fix $\varepsilon>0$ we choose $\delta>0$ as above. Then, for all $t \in(0, \delta)$, we $f_{t} \rightarrow$
find

$$
\left\|f_{t}-f\right\| \leq \sup _{\xi \in \mathbb{R}}\{\frac{1}{t} \int_{0}^{t} \underbrace{|f(\xi+s)-f(\xi)|}_{<\varepsilon, \text { because } s \in(0, \delta)} \mathrm{d} s\}<\varepsilon,
$$

that is, $f_{t} \rightarrow f, t \rightarrow 0$.
(ii) $A$ is closed and $\sigma(A) \subset \mathrm{i} \mathbb{R}$ : For $\lambda \in \mathbb{C} \backslash i \mathbb{R}$ define

$$
g_{\lambda}(\xi)= \begin{cases}\int_{\xi}^{\infty} \mathrm{e}^{(\xi-s) \lambda} f(s) \mathrm{d} s, & \operatorname{Re}(\lambda)>0, \\ -\int_{-\infty}^{\xi} \mathrm{e}^{(\xi-s) \lambda} f(s) \mathrm{d} s, & \operatorname{Re}(\lambda)<0,\end{cases}
$$

Obviously $g_{\lambda}$ is continuous and we have $\left\|g_{\lambda}\right\| \leq \frac{\|f\|}{\mid \operatorname{Re}(\lambda)}$. For instance, for $\operatorname{Re}(\lambda)>0$

$$
\left\|g_{\lambda}\right\|=\sup _{\xi \in \mathbb{R}}\left\{\left|\int_{\xi}^{\infty} \mathrm{e}^{(\xi-s) \lambda} f(s) \mathrm{d} s\right|\right\} \leq\|f\| \sup _{\xi \in \mathbb{R}}\left\{\int_{\xi}^{\infty} \mathrm{e}^{(\xi-s) \operatorname{Re}(\lambda)} \mathrm{d} s\right\}=\frac{\|f\|}{\operatorname{Re}(\lambda)}
$$

The uniform continuity of $g_{\lambda}$ follows for $\operatorname{Re}(\lambda)>0$ from

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|g_{\lambda}(\xi)-g_{\lambda}(\eta)\right| & =\left|\int_{\xi}^{\infty} \mathrm{e}^{(\xi-s) \lambda} f(s) \mathrm{d} s-\int_{\eta}^{\infty} \mathrm{e}^{(\eta-s) \lambda} f(s) \mathrm{d} s\right| \\
& =\left|\int_{\xi}^{\eta} \mathrm{e}^{(\xi-s) \lambda} f(s) \mathrm{d} s+\int_{\eta}^{\infty} \mathrm{e}^{(\xi-s) \lambda} f(s)-\mathrm{e}^{(\eta-s) \lambda} f(s) \mathrm{d} s\right| \\
& =\left|\int_{0}^{\eta-\xi} \mathrm{e}^{s \lambda} f(s) \mathrm{d} s+\int_{\eta}^{\infty} \mathrm{e}^{(\eta-s) \lambda} f(s)\left[\mathrm{e}^{(\xi-\eta) \lambda}-1\right] \mathrm{d} s\right| \\
& \leq\|f\|\left|\int_{0}^{\eta-\xi} \mathrm{e}^{-s \lambda} \mathrm{~d} s\right|+\left|\left[\mathrm{e}^{(\xi-\eta) \lambda}-1\right] \int_{0}^{\infty} \mathrm{e}^{-s \lambda} f(s) \mathrm{d} s\right|
\end{aligned}
$$

since the right side depends only of $\xi-\eta$ and converges to 0 if $\xi-\eta \rightarrow 0$. In summary, we showed $g_{\lambda} \in X$. Since obviously $g_{\lambda}$ is continuously differentiable, it also follows that $g_{\lambda} \in \mathcal{D}(A)$ and an easy calculation shows $(A-\lambda) g_{\lambda}=f$. In particular, $\lambda-A$ is surjective. Injectivity of $\lambda-A$ follows because for $f \in C^{1}(\mathbb{R})$ we have

$$
\lambda f-f^{\prime}=0 \quad \Longleftrightarrow \quad f(\xi)=c e^{\xi \lambda}, \quad \xi \in \mathbb{R}
$$

 for all $f \in X$, i.e.,

$$
\lambda \in \rho(A) \quad \text { and } \quad\left\|(A-\lambda)^{-1}\right\| \leq \frac{1}{|\operatorname{Re} \lambda|}, \quad \lambda \in \mathbb{C} \backslash i \mathbb{R} .
$$

Hence $A-\lambda$ is closed by virtue of the closed graph theorem, hence also $A$ is closed.

Let $1 \leq p<\infty$ and $X=L_{p}(\mathbb{R})$. Let $A(X \rightarrow X)$ be defined by
$\mathcal{D}(A)=W^{1, p}(\mathbb{R})=\left\{f \in X: f\right.$ absolutely continuous, $\left.f^{\prime} \in X\right\}, \quad A f=f^{\prime}$
Then $A$ generates the translation semigroup $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ with

$$
(T(t) f)(\xi)=f(t+\xi), \quad t \geq 0, f \in X, \xi \in \mathbb{R}
$$

Proof. See, e. g., [EN00, II.2.10, II.2.11].
3. Diffusion semigroup on $L_{p}\left(\mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$.

Let $1<p<\infty$ and $X=L_{p}\left(\mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$. Then $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$, defined by $T(0)=$ id and

$$
(T(t) f)(\xi)=(4 \pi t)^{-\frac{n}{2}} \int_{\mathbb{R}^{n}} \mathrm{e}^{-\frac{|\xi-s|^{2}}{4 t}} f(s) \mathrm{d} s, \quad \xi \in \mathbb{R}^{n}, f \in X, t>0
$$

is the so-called diffusion semigroup (or heat semigroup).
$\mathcal{T}$ is a strongly continuous semigroup on $X$. Its generator $A$ is

$$
(A f)(\xi)=(\Delta f)(\xi)=\sum_{j=1}^{n} \frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial \xi_{j}^{2}} f(\xi), \quad f \in \mathcal{D}(A), \xi=\left(\xi_{1}, \ldots, \xi_{n}\right) \in \mathbb{R}^{n}
$$

$\mathcal{D}(A)=W^{2, p}\left(\mathbb{R}^{n}\right)=\left\{f \in L_{p}\left(\mathbb{R}^{n}\right): f\right.$ twice weakly differentiable and $\left.\Delta f \in L_{p}\left(\mathbb{R}^{n}\right)\right\}$.
Proof. See, e. g., [EN00, II.2.12, II.2.13]or [Wer00, ]
(i) $\mathcal{T}$ is a strongly continuous semigroup.

Let $\gamma_{t}(s):=(4 \pi t)^{-1} \mathrm{e}^{\frac{-\left.s s\right|^{2}}{4 t}}, t>0, s \in \mathbb{R}^{n}$. It can be shown that

$$
\gamma_{t} \in \mathcal{S}\left(\mathbb{R}^{n}\right)=\left\{f \in C^{\infty}\left(\mathbb{R}^{n}\right): \lim _{|\xi| \rightarrow \infty}|x|^{k} D^{\alpha} f(x) \rightarrow 0, k \in \mathbb{N}, \alpha \in \mathbb{N}^{n}\right\}
$$

$\mathcal{S}\left(\mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ is called the Schwartz space. It can be shown that $\mathcal{S}\left(\mathbb{R}^{n}\right) \subseteq L_{p}\left(\mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ is dense for $p \geq 1$ and that $\mathcal{S}\left(\mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ is invariant under Fourier transformation (see Section 4.4). Observe that

$$
T(t) f=\gamma_{t} * f, \quad t>0, f \in X,
$$

hence Young's inequalities yields

$$
\|T(t) f\|_{p} \leq\left\|\gamma_{t}\right\|_{1}\|f\|_{p}=\|f\|_{p}
$$

Hence we showed that $\|T(t)\| \leq 1, t \geq 0$.
The semigroup properties of $\mathcal{T}$ follow from $\gamma_{t+s}=\gamma_{s} * \gamma_{t}$ (easy to verify) and the associativity of the convolution. Strong continuity of $\mathcal{T}$ can be shown using measure theory.
(ii) Generator of $\mathcal{T}$ : We show the assertion only for $p=2$.

Let $A$ be the generator of $\mathcal{T}$. $\qquad$

### 5.6 Dissipative operators and contraction semigroups

Definition 5.39. Let $X$ be a Banach space and $A$ a (not necessarily densely de-
fined) linear operator on $X . A$ is called dissipative if

$$
\|(\lambda-A) x\| \geq \lambda\|x\|, \quad \lambda>0, x \in \mathcal{D}(A)
$$

Proposition 5.40. If $A$ is a dissipative operator on a Banach space $X$, then
(i) $\lambda-A$ is injective for $\lambda>0$ and

$$
\left\|(\lambda-A)^{-1} y\right\| \leq \frac{1}{\lambda}\|y\|, \quad \lambda>0, y \in \operatorname{rg}(\lambda-A) .
$$

(ii) $\lambda-A$ is surjective for some $\lambda>0 \Longleftrightarrow \lambda-A$ is surjective for all $\lambda>0$. In this case, $(0, \infty) \subseteq \rho(A)$.
(iii) $A$ is closed $\Longleftrightarrow \operatorname{rg}(\lambda-A)$ is closed for some $\lambda>0$,

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\Longleftrightarrow \quad \operatorname{rg}(\lambda-A) \text { is closed for some } \lambda>0 \\
\Longleftrightarrow \quad \operatorname{rog}(\lambda-A) \text { is closed for all } \lambda>0
\end{array}
$$

(iv) If $\operatorname{rg}(\lambda, A) \subseteq \overline{\mathcal{D}(A)}$, then $A$ is closable. In this case, also its closure $\bar{A}$ is dissipative and $\operatorname{rg}(\lambda-\bar{A})=\overline{\operatorname{rg}(\lambda-A)}, \lambda>0$.

Proof. (i) is clear. (ii) Assume that $\lambda_{0}-A$ is surjective for a $\lambda_{0}>0$. Then $\lambda_{0} \in \rho(A)$ and $\left\|R\left(\lambda_{0}, A\right)\right\| \leq \frac{1}{\lambda_{0}}$ by (i). For $\mu \in\left(0,2 \lambda_{0}\right)$ the operator

$$
\mu-A=\mu-\lambda_{0}+\lambda_{0}-A=\left(\left(\mu-\lambda_{0}\right) R\left(\lambda_{0}, A\right)+\mathrm{id}\right)\left(\lambda_{0}-A\right)
$$

is bijective by the theorem of von Neumann because $\left\|\left(\mu-\lambda_{0}\right) R\left(\lambda_{0}, A\right)\right\|<1$, hence $\left(0,2 \lambda_{0}\right) \subseteq \rho(A)$. By induction, $(0, \infty) \subseteq \rho(A)$.
(iii) To show that $A$ is closed, it suffices to show that $\lambda-A$ is closed for some (and then for all) $\lambda>0$. This is equivalent to

$$
(\lambda-A)^{-1}: \operatorname{rg}(\lambda-A) \rightarrow X
$$

being closed for some (all) $\lambda>0$. By the closed graph theorem, this is the case if and only if $\operatorname{rg}(\lambda-A)$ is close for some (all) $\lambda>0$.
(iv) Assume that $\operatorname{rg}(\lambda-A) \subseteq \mathcal{D}(A)$. Let $y \in X$ and $\left(x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ with $x_{n} \rightarrow 0$ and $A x_{n} \rightarrow y$ for $n \rightarrow \infty$. We have to show that $y=0$. For all $w \in \mathcal{D}(A)$ and $\lambda>0$ the following holds

$$
\left\|\lambda(\lambda-A) x_{n}-(\lambda-A) w\right\| \geq \lambda\left\|\lambda x_{n}-w\right\| .
$$

Taking the limit $n \rightarrow \infty$ we obtain

$$
\begin{array}{ll} 
& \|\lambda y-(\lambda-A) w\| \geq \lambda\|w\|, \\
\Longrightarrow & \left\|y-w-\lambda^{-1} A w\right\| \geq\|w\|, \\
\xlongequal{\lambda \rightarrow \infty} & \|y-w\| \geq\|w\| .
\end{array}
$$

Since $y \in \overline{\operatorname{rg}(A)} \subseteq \overline{\mathcal{D}(A)}$, there exists a sequence $\left(w_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \subseteq \mathcal{D}(A)$ which converge to $y$. The inequality above yields $\|y\|=\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left\|w_{n}\right\| \leq \lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left\|y-w_{n}\right\|=0$. For the proof of the dissipativity of $\bar{A}$ fix $x \in \mathcal{D}(\bar{A})$. By assumption there exists a sequence $\left(x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ such that $x_{n} \rightarrow x$ and $A x_{n} \rightarrow \bar{A} x$ for $n \rightarrow \infty$. Since $\|\cdot\|$ is continuous, it follows that

$$
\|(\lambda-A) x\|=\lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left\|(\lambda-A) x_{n}\right\| \geq \lambda \lim _{n \rightarrow \infty}\left\|x_{n}\right\|=\lambda\|x\|
$$

Using that $\operatorname{rg}(\lambda-A)$ is dense in $\operatorname{rg}(\lambda-\bar{A})$, we find $\overline{\operatorname{rg}(\lambda-A)}=\overline{\operatorname{rg}(\lambda-\bar{A})}=\operatorname{rg}(\lambda-\bar{A})$. The last equality follows from (iii) because $\bar{A}$ is closed.

In the special case of Hilbert spaces we have the following lemma.
Lemma 5.41. Let $H$ be a Hilbert space and $A$ a linear operator on $H$. Then

$$
\text { A dissipative } \quad \Longleftrightarrow \quad \operatorname{Re}\langle A x, x\rangle \leq 0, \quad x \in \mathcal{D}(A)
$$

Proof. " $\Longleftarrow$ " Fix $x \in \mathcal{D}(A)$, without restriction we assume $\|x\|=1$. Then, for $\lambda>0$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|(\lambda-A) x\| & =\|(\lambda-A) x\|\|x\| \geq|\langle(\lambda-A) x, x\rangle| \geq \operatorname{Re}(\lambda-\langle A x, x\rangle) \\
& =\lambda-\operatorname{Re}(\langle A x, x\rangle) \geq \lambda .
\end{aligned}
$$

" $\Longrightarrow$ " Fix $x \in \mathcal{D}(A)$, without restriction we assume $\|x\|=1$. For $\lambda>0$ define $x_{\lambda}=$ $\|(\lambda-A) x\|^{-1}(\lambda-A) x$. Then $\lim _{\lambda \rightarrow \infty} x_{\lambda}=\lim _{\lambda \rightarrow \infty}\left\|x-\lambda^{-1} A x\right\|^{-1}\left(x-\lambda^{-1} A\right) x=x$ and, by hypothesis,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\lambda & \leq\|(\lambda-A) x\|=\left\langle(\lambda-A) x, x_{\lambda}\right\rangle=\operatorname{Re}\left\langle\lambda x, x_{\lambda}\right\rangle-\operatorname{Re}\left\langle A x, x_{\lambda}\right\rangle \\
& \leq \lambda\|x\|\left\|x_{\lambda}\right\|-\operatorname{Re}\left\langle A x, x_{\lambda}\right\rangle=\lambda-\operatorname{Re}\left\langle A x, x_{\lambda}\right\rangle .
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence it follows that $\operatorname{Re}\left\langle A x, x_{\lambda}\right\rangle \leq 0$.
Lemma 5.42. Let $H$ be a Hilbert space and $A$ a dissipative operator on $H$. If $\lambda-A$ is surjective for some $\lambda>0$, then $A$ is densely defined.

Proof. By Proposition 5.40 (ii) we know that $\lambda \in \rho(A)$. We have to show that $\operatorname{rg}(\lambda-A)^{-1}$ is dense in $H$. Choose $v \in \operatorname{rg}(\lambda-A)^{\perp}$. Hence $\left\langle v,(\lambda-A)^{-1} u\right\rangle=0$, $u \in H$. In particular, taking $u=v$ yields
$0=\left\langle v,(\lambda-A)^{-1} v\right\rangle=\left\langle(\lambda-A)(\lambda-A)^{-1} v,(\lambda-A)^{-1} v\right\rangle$

$$
=\lambda\left\|(\lambda-A)^{-1} v\right\|^{2}-\operatorname{Re}\left\langle A(\lambda-A)^{-1} v,(\lambda-A)^{-1} v\right\rangle \geq \lambda\left\|(\lambda-A)^{-1} v\right\|^{2} \geq 0,
$$

hence $\left\|(\lambda-A)^{-1} v\right\|=0$. Since $(\lambda-A)^{-1}$ is injective, it follows that $v=0$, as we wanted to show.
Lemma 5.41 and Lemma 5.42 are special cases of the following lemmas:

## Dissipative operators in Banach spaces

Definition 5.43. Let $X$ be a Banach space with dual space $X^{\prime}$. For every $x \in X$ we call

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{J}(x):=\left\{x^{\prime} \in X^{\prime}:\left\langle x, x^{\prime}\right\rangle=\|x\|=\left\|x^{\prime}\right\|\right\} . \tag{5.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

the duality set of x .
By the Hahn-Banach theorem $\mathcal{J}(x) \neq\{0\}$. The elements $x^{\prime} \in \mathcal{J}(x)$ are called normalised tangent functionals to $x$. If $X$ is a Hilbert space, then $\mathcal{J}(x)$ consists of exactly one element.
In analogy to Lemma 5.41 we have:
Lemma. Let $X$ be a Banach space and $A$ a linear operator on $X$. Then

$$
\text { A dissipative } \Longleftrightarrow \forall x \in \mathcal{D}(A) \exists j(x) \in \mathcal{J}(x): \operatorname{Re}\langle A x, j(x)\rangle \leq 0
$$

If $X$ is a reflexive Banach space, then in analogy to Lemma 5.42 we have:

Lemma. Let $X$ be a reflexive Banach space and $A$ a dissipative operator on $X$. If $\lambda-A$ is surjective for some $\lambda>0$, then $A$ is densely defined.
Theorem 5.44 (Lumer-Phillips). Let $X$ be a Banach space and $A$ a densely defined dissipative linear operator on $X$. Then the following is equivalent:
(i) $\bar{A}$ generates a contraction semigroup.
(ii) There exists some $\lambda>0$ such that $\operatorname{rg}(\lambda-A)$ is dense in $X$.

Proof. (i) $\Rightarrow$ (ii) By the Hille-Yosida theorem (Corollary 5.33) we know that $\mathrm{rg}(\lambda-$ $\bar{A})=X$, consequently by Proposition $5.40 \overline{\operatorname{rg}(\lambda-A)}=\operatorname{rg}(\lambda-\bar{A})=X$. (ii) $\Rightarrow$ (i) Since $\mathcal{D}(A)$ is dense in $X$, Proposition 5.40 (iv) shows that $A$ is closable and that $\bar{A}-\lambda$ is surjective for every $\lambda>0$. Proposition 5.40 (i) yields that $\lambda \in \rho(A)$ and $\|R(\lambda, \bar{A})\| \leq \frac{1}{\lambda}$. Therefore, by the Hille-Yosida theorem (Corollary 5.33) $\bar{A}$ the generator of a contraction semigroup.
Remark. Let $H$ be a Hilbert space and $A$ a linear operator on $H$. If
(i) $\langle A x, x\rangle \leq 0, x \in \mathcal{D}(A)$
(ii) $\overline{\operatorname{rg}(\lambda-A)}=H$ for some $\lambda>0$,
then $\bar{A}$ generates a contraction semigroup on $H$. The hypothesis (i) shows that $A$ is dissipative, together with condition (ii) it follows that $A$ is densely defined (Proposition 5.42). The Lumer-Phillips theorem implies then that $\bar{A}$ generates a strongly continuous semigroup.
In particular for spaces of functions, the conditions (i) and (ii) are often easier to check then the hypothesis in the Hille-Yosida theorem.

Example 5.45. Let $X=C([0,1])$ and the linear operator $A$ on $X$ be defined by

$$
A f=f^{\prime}, \quad f \in \mathcal{D}(A)=\left\{f \in C^{1}([0,1]): f(0)=0, f^{\prime} \in C([0,1])\right\} .
$$

Then $A$ is closed, $\lambda-A$ is bijective for every $\lambda \in \mathbb{C}$ and

$$
R(\lambda, A) f(\xi)=\int_{0}^{\xi} \mathrm{e}^{-(\xi-s) \lambda} f(s) \mathrm{d} s, \quad \xi \in[0,1], \lambda \in \mathbb{C}, f \in X
$$

For $\lambda \neq 0$, the estimate

$$
\|R(\lambda, A) f\| \leq\|f\| \sup _{\xi \in[0,1]} \int_{0}^{\xi} \mathrm{e}^{-(\xi-s) \operatorname{Re} \lambda} \mathrm{d} s=\frac{1}{\lambda}\|f\|\left(1-\mathrm{e}^{-\operatorname{Re} \lambda}\right) \leq \frac{1}{\lambda}\|f\|
$$

shows that $A$ is dissipative.
However, $A$ is not densely defined and therefore does not generate a strongly continuous semigroup on $X$. By Lemma 5.37, $A$ induces a strongly continuous semigroup on the subspace

$$
X_{0}=\overline{\mathcal{D}(A)}=\{f \in X: f(0)=0\}
$$

Let $A_{\mid}$be the part of $A$ in $X$, that is,

$$
A_{\mid} f=f^{\prime}, \quad f \in \mathcal{D}\left(A_{\mid}\right)=\left\{f \in X: f \in C^{1}([0,1]), f(0)=f^{\prime}(0)=0\right\}
$$

Then $A_{\mid}$is densely defined in $X_{0}$ (Lemma 5.37), dissipative and $\lambda-A_{\mid}: X_{0} \rightarrow X_{0}$ is surjective, hence $A_{\mid}$generates a strongly continuous semigroup by the LumerPhillips theorem (Theorem 5.44).

Definition 5.46. A (strongly continuous) semigroup $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ on a Banach space $X$ is called a (strongly continuous) unitary semigroup, if every $T(t), t \geq 0$, is unitary. Analogously, (strongly continuous) unitary groups are defined.

Theorem 5.47 (Stone). Let $H$ be a Hilbert space and $A$ a densely defined linearer operator on $H$. Then the following is equivalent:
(i) A generates a unitary group $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \in \mathbb{R}}$ on $H$.
(ii) $A$ is skew-selfadjoint, that is, $A^{*}=-A$.

Proof. (i) $\Rightarrow$ (ii) Observe that $T(t)^{*}=T(t)^{-1}=T(-t)$ for all $t \in \mathbb{R}$ by assumption Hence $\mathcal{T}^{*}=\left(T(t)^{*}\right)_{t \in \mathbb{R}}$ is a strongly continuous group with generator $-A$. If $x \in \mathcal{D}(A)$, then
$\langle x, A y\rangle=\lim _{t \geqslant 0}\left\langle x, \frac{1}{t}(T(t)-\mathrm{id}) y\right\rangle=\lim _{t \searrow 0}\left\langle\frac{1}{t}\left(T(t)^{*}-\mathrm{id}\right) x, y\right\rangle=\langle-A x, y\rangle$,
so $\mathcal{D}(A) \subseteq \mathcal{D}\left(A^{*}\right)$ and $A^{*} x=-A x$ for $x \in \mathcal{D}(A)$.
It remains to show that $A^{*} \subseteq-A$. Note that this is equivalent to show that $(\mathrm{i} A)^{*} \subseteq \mathrm{i} A$. By what we already showed, we know that $\mathrm{i} A$ is symmetric. It is closed because it is the generator of a strongly continuous semigroup. Hence it suffices to show that $\pm \mathrm{i}$ belong to the resolvent set of $\mathrm{i} A$ (see Corollary 3.10). Note that $A$ generates a contraction semigroups, so $\mathbb{R} \backslash\{0\} \subseteq \rho(A)$ (Theorem 5.35). Hence $\mathrm{i} \mathbb{R} \backslash\{0\} \subseteq \rho(\mathrm{i} A)$ which completes the proof.
Alternative proof of " $A^{*} \subseteq-A$ ":
Let $x \in \mathcal{D}\left(A^{*}\right)$. Since $-A$ is the generator of $\mathcal{T}^{*}$ ist, Proposition 5.25 (iv) shows that

$$
\frac{1}{t}\left(T(t)^{*} x-x\right)=\frac{1}{t}(-A) \int_{0}^{t} T(s)^{*} x \mathrm{~d} s
$$

Using that $-A \subseteq A^{*}$ and $T(s)^{*} x \in \mathcal{D}(-A) \subseteq \mathcal{D}\left(A^{*}\right)$ for all $s \in[0, t]$, we conclude

$$
\frac{1}{t}\left(T(t)^{*} x-x\right)=\frac{1}{t} A^{*} \int_{0}^{t} T(s)^{*} x \mathrm{~d} s=\frac{1}{t} \int_{0}^{t} A^{*} T(s)^{*} x \mathrm{~d} s
$$

Note that $\left\langle T(s)^{*} x, A y\right\rangle=\langle x, T(s) A y\rangle=\langle x, A T(s) y\rangle=\left\langle A^{*} x, T(s) y\right\rangle, y \in \mathcal{D}(A)$, so that $T(s)^{*} x \in \mathcal{D}\left(A^{*}\right)$. Since $T(s)$ is bounded, it follows that $A^{*} T(s)^{*}=(T(s) A)^{*}$. Note that $A$ and $T(s)$ commute and, because of $(A T(s))^{*} \supseteq T(s)^{*} A^{*}$, it follows that

$$
\frac{1}{t}\left(T(t)^{*} x-x\right)=\frac{1}{t} \int_{0}^{t} T(s)^{*} A^{*} x \mathrm{~d} s \xrightarrow{t \rightarrow 0} T(0)^{*} A^{*} x=A^{*} x .
$$

The last equality holds because $s \rightarrow T(s)^{*} A^{*} x$ in continuous in 0 . Consequently, $x \in \mathcal{D}(-A)$ (because $-A$ is the generator or $\mathcal{T}^{*}$ ) and we have $-A x=A^{*} x$.
(ii) $\Rightarrow$ (i) By assumption, $A$ and $-A$ are densely defined and closed and

$$
\langle A x, x\rangle=\left\langle x, A^{*} x\right\rangle=-\langle x, A x\rangle=-\overline{\langle A x, x\rangle}, \quad x \in \mathcal{D}(A)
$$

hence $A$ and $-A$ are dissipative. By the Lumer-Phillips theorem (Theorem 5.44), both $A$ and $-A$ generate contraction semigroups, hence $A$ generates a contraction group $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \in \mathbb{R}}$ on $H$ (see Theorem 5.35). It remains to be proved that $T(t)^{*}=T(t)^{-1}, t \in \mathbb{R}$.
For every $s \in \mathbb{R}, T(s)$ is surjective (because it is even invertible) and isometric because

$$
\|x\|=\left\|T(s)^{-1} T(s) x\right\| \leq\left\|T(s)^{-1}\right\|\|T(s) x\| \leq\|T(-s)\|\|T(s)\|\|x\|, \quad x \in H .
$$

Since $\|T(s)\| \leq 1, s \in \mathbb{R}$, (recall that $\mathcal{T}$ is a contraction semigroup) the above inequality shows that $\|x\|=\|T(s) x\|, x \in H$. Therefore $T(s)$ is unitary (see, e. g.,
$[$ Kat95, V $\S 2.2]$ ). [Kat95, V § 2.2]).

Remark 5.48. By scaling we can always convert a strongly continuous semigroup on a Banach space $X$ in a bounded strongly continuous semigroup. The spectrum of the generator is then shifted to the left (Lemma 5.27). But we do not necessarily obtain a contraction semigroup.
The next lemma shows that there exists a norm on $X$, equivalent to the original norm, such that the semigroup is a contraction semigroup. Therefore the LumerPhillips theorem is true for arbitrary strongly continuous semigroups.
Lemma 5.49. Let $(X,\|\cdot\|)$ be a Banach space and $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ a bounded strongly continuous semigroup on $X$. Then

$$
\|x\|_{\mathcal{T}}:=\sup \{\|T(s) x\|: s \geq 0\}, \quad x \in X
$$

defines a norm which is equivalent to $\|\cdot\|$, and $\mathcal{T}$ is a contraction semigroup on $\left(X,\|\cdot\|_{\mathcal{T}}\right)$.

Proof. Since $\mathcal{T}$ is a bounded semigroup, there exists $M \geq 1$ such that $\|T(s)\| \leq M$ for all $s \geq 0$. It is easy to check that $\|\cdot\|_{\mathcal{T}}$ has all properties of a norm. Moreover,

$$
\|x\|=\|T(0) x\| \leq\|x\|_{\mathcal{T}}=\sup \{\|T(s) x\|: s \geq 0\} \leq M\|x\|, \quad x \in X
$$

therefore $\|\cdot\|$ and $\|\cdot\|_{\mathcal{T}}$ are equivalent. If $x \in X$ and $t \geq 0$, then

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|T(t) x\|_{\mathcal{T}} & =\sup \{\|T(t) T(s) x\|: s \geq 0\}=\sup \{\|T(t+s) x\|: s \geq 0\} \\
& \leq \sup \{\|T(s) x\|: s \geq 0\}=\|x\|_{\mathcal{T}},
\end{aligned}
$$

hence $\|T(t)\| \leq 1, t \geq 0$.
$\square$

If $A$ is selfadjoint, then $f(A)$ defined in the definition (6.1) coincides with the definition with the help of the spectral family (Definition ??).

## Chapter 6

## Analytic semigroups

In Proposition 5.40 it was shown that the spectrum of a dissipative operator $A$ lies in a left semiplane in $\mathbb{C}$ and that the resolvent on the right semiaxis satisfies the estimate $\|R(\lambda, A)\| \leq \lambda^{-1}$ if $\lambda-A$ is surjective for $\lambda>0$.

In this chapter we deal with linear operators whose spectrum lies in a sector and whose resolvent satisfies a certain estimate outside of the sector.

Let us recall:
Cauchy's integral formula. Let $\Omega \subset \mathbb{C}$ be a domain, $z_{0} \in \Omega, r>0$ such that Cauchy's integral formula. Let $\Omega \subset \mathbb{C}$ be a domain, $z_{0} \in \Omega, r>0$ such that
the closed disk $K_{r}\left(z_{0}\right)=\left\{z \in \mathbb{C}:\left|z-z_{0}\right| \leq r\right\}$ belongs to $\Omega$. If $f: \Omega \rightarrow \mathbb{C}$ is

$$
=x
$$ holomorphic, then

$$
f\left(z_{0}\right)=\frac{1}{2 \pi \mathrm{i}} \int_{\partial K_{r}\left(z_{0}\right)} \frac{f(\zeta)}{\zeta-z_{0}} \mathrm{~d} \zeta,
$$

where $\partial K_{r}\left(z_{0}\right)$ is the positively oriented boundary of $K_{r}\left(z_{0}\right)$
More generally, if $\gamma$ is a closed path in $\Omega \backslash\left\{z_{0}\right\}$ and $\nu\left(z_{0}, \gamma\right)$ is the XXX Umlaufszahl of $\gamma$ around $z_{0}$, then

$$
f^{(n)}\left(z_{0}\right) \nu\left(z_{0}, \gamma\right)=\frac{n!}{2 \pi \mathrm{i}} \int_{\partial K_{r}\left(z_{0}\right)} \frac{f(\zeta)}{\left(\zeta-z_{0}\right)^{n+1}} \mathrm{~d} \zeta .
$$

Dunford functional calculus. Let $X$ be a Banach space and $A$ a densely defined linear operator on $X$. Then the map $\rho(A) \rightarrow L(X), \lambda \rightarrow R(\lambda, A)$, is holomorphic If $A$ is a everywhere defined bounded operator, then $\sigma(A)$ bounded. Let $\Omega \subseteq \mathbb{C}$ be a domain with $\sigma(A) \subseteq \Omega$ and $\gamma$ a closed path which lies in $\Omega$ and goes around every point in $\sigma(A)$ exactly once positively oriented. Then we define for holomorphic $f: \Omega \rightarrow \mathbb{C}$

$$
\begin{equation*}
f(A)=\frac{1}{2 \pi \mathrm{i}} \int_{\gamma} f(\zeta) R(\zeta, A) \mathrm{d} \zeta . \tag{6.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

This definition does not depend on the choice of $\gamma$.


Examples:
(i) $f: \mathbb{C} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}, f(z)=1$, then $f(A)=$ id.

Proof. For arbitrary $y \in X^{\prime}$ the map $z \mapsto\left\langle(z-A)^{-1} x, y\right\rangle$ is holomorphic in $\rho(A)$. Without restriction, we can assume that $\gamma=K_{r}(0)$ for large enough $r$. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
f(A) x & =\frac{1}{2 \pi \mathrm{i}} \int_{\gamma} R(\zeta, A) x \mathrm{~d} \zeta=\frac{1}{2 \pi \mathrm{i}} \int_{\gamma} \frac{1}{\zeta}\left(1-\frac{1}{\zeta} R(\zeta, A)\right)^{-1} x \mathrm{~d} \zeta \\
& =\frac{1}{2 \pi \mathrm{i}} \int_{\gamma} \frac{1}{\zeta} \underbrace{\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \zeta^{-n} A^{n} x}_{\text {converges unif. for } \zeta \in \gamma} \mathrm{d} \zeta=\frac{1}{2 \pi \mathrm{i}} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \underbrace{\int_{\gamma} \zeta^{-n-1} A^{n} x \mathrm{~d} \zeta}_{\substack{=0, \text { f.llls } n \geq 1 \\
=2 \pi \mathrm{i}, \text { falls } n=0}}
\end{aligned}
$$

(ii) $f: \mathbb{C} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}, f(z)=z$, then $f(A)=A$.
(iii) For the exponential function $\exp (t A)$ as in Definition ??

$$
\exp (t A)=\frac{1}{2 \pi \mathrm{i}} \int_{\gamma} \mathrm{e}^{t \zeta} R(\zeta, A) \mathrm{d} \zeta .
$$

For unbounded operators, the spectrum is in general unbounded. Therefore, the functional calculus described above cannot be applied to unbounded operators with out additional assumptions. For sectorial operatoren there is an integral represen tation of the generated semigroup.
For $\varphi \in(0, \pi]$ we define the (open) sector

$$
\Sigma_{\varphi}:=\{z \in \mathbb{C}:|\arg z|<\varphi\} \backslash\{0\} .
$$

Definition 6.1. Let $X$ be a Banach space. A densely defined linear operato $A(X \rightarrow X)$ is called sectorial with angle $\delta$ if there exists a $\delta \in(0, \pi / 2]$ such that

$$
\Sigma_{\pi / 2+\delta} \subseteq \rho(A),
$$

and if for every $\varepsilon \in(0, \delta)$ there exists an $C_{\varepsilon} \geq 0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|R(\lambda, A)\| \leq \frac{C_{\varepsilon}}{|\lambda|}, \quad \lambda \in \overline{\Sigma_{\pi / 2+\delta-\varepsilon}} \backslash\{0\} . \tag{6.2}
\end{equation*}
$$



Figure 6.1: Spectrum of a sectorial operator.

Definition 6.2. Let $X$ ein Banach space and $A$ a sectorial operator on $X$ with angle $\delta \in(0, \pi / 2]$. We define $T(0):=$ id and for $z \in \Sigma_{\delta}$ we define $T(z)$ as follows. Choose an arbitrary $\delta^{\prime} \in(|\arg (z)|, \delta)$ and define

$$
\begin{equation*}
T(z):=\frac{1}{2 \pi \mathrm{i}} \int_{\gamma} \mathrm{e}^{\mu z} R(\mu, A) \mathrm{d} \mu, \tag{6.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\gamma$ is an arbitrary piecewise smooth contour in $\Sigma_{\pi / 2+\delta}$ from $\infty \mathrm{e}^{-\mathrm{i}\left(\delta^{\prime}+\pi / 2\right)}$ to $\infty \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i}(\delta+\pi / 2)^{\prime}}$, see Figure 6.2.


Figure 6.2: Path of integration $\gamma_{r, \delta^{\prime}}$.

The condition $z \in \Sigma_{\delta}$ guarantees that $\arg (\mu z) \in(\pi / 2+\varepsilon, 3 \pi / 2-\varepsilon)$ for sufficiently small $\varepsilon>0$, so that $\operatorname{Re}(\mu z) \sim-C|\mu|$ for a positive constant $C$ for $|\mu|$ large enough Consequently, the norm of the integrand decays exponentially and the integral is well-defined. More precisely:

Proposition 6.3. Let $X$ be a Banach space and $A$ a sectorial operator on $X$ with angle $\delta \in(0, \pi / 2]$. Then (6.2) defines a bounded linear operator and
(i) $\|T(z)\|$ is uniformly bounded for $z \in \Sigma_{\delta^{\prime}}$ for every $\delta^{\prime} \in(0, \delta)$.
(ii) The map $z \mapsto T(z)$ is analytic.
(iii) $T\left(z_{1}+z_{2}\right)=T\left(z_{1}\right) T\left(z_{2}\right), \quad z_{1}, z_{2} \in \Sigma_{\delta}$
(iv) The map $z \mapsto T(z)$ is strongly continuous in $\Sigma_{\delta^{\prime}} \cup\{0\}$ for every $\delta^{\prime} \in(0, \delta)$.
(v) $(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ is a strongly continuous semigroup with generator $A$.

Definition 6.4. Let $\delta \in(0, \pi / 2]$. A family $\mathcal{T}=(T(z))_{z \in \Sigma_{\delta}} \subseteq L(X)$ is called a bounded analytic semigroup with angle $\delta$ if
(i) $T(0)=$ id and $T\left(z_{1}+z_{2}\right)=T\left(z_{1}\right) T\left(z_{2}\right), z_{1}, z_{2} \in \Sigma_{\delta} ;$
(ii) $z \mapsto T(z)$ is analytic in $\Sigma_{\delta}$;
(iii) $\lim _{\substack{z \rightarrow \Sigma_{j}^{0} \\ z \in \mathcal{L}^{\prime}}} T(z) x=x, \delta^{\prime} \in(0, \delta), x \in X$ (strong continuity in sectors $\Sigma_{\delta^{\prime}}$ ).

If in addition the following holds,
(iv) for every $\delta^{\prime} \in(0, \delta)$ there exits an $M_{\delta^{\prime}}$ such that $\|T(z)\| \leq M_{\delta^{\prime}}$ for all $z \in \Sigma_{\delta^{\prime}}$, then $\mathcal{T}$ is called an analytic semigroup.

Remark. For a strongly continuous semigroup $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ with generator $A$ the maps $[0, \infty) \rightarrow X, t \mapsto T(t) x$ are differentiable for every $x \in \mathcal{D}(A)$. If $\mathcal{T}$ is an analytic semigroup with angle $\delta$, then $T(\cdot)$ is norm differentiable in every sector $\Sigma_{\delta^{\prime}}$ with $0<\delta^{\prime}<\delta$.

Remark. If $\mathcal{T}$ is an analytic semigroup and its restriction to real $t$ is a bounded strongly continuous semigroup, then $\mathcal{T}$ is not necessarily a bounded analytic semigroup. For instance, the multiplication semigroup $\left(\mathrm{e}^{i z}\right)_{z \in \mathbb{C}}$ on $X=\mathbb{C}$ is a non bounded analytic semigroup whose restriction $\left(\mathrm{e}^{i t}\right)_{t>0}$ to $\mathbb{R}_{+}$is a bounded semigroup.

Proof of Proposition 6.3. Proof that $T(z)$ is well-defined and of (i): Fix $\delta^{\prime} \in(0, \delta)$ and $z \in \Sigma_{\delta^{\prime}}$. Since the integrand in (6.2) is analytic, the integral does not depend on the path $\gamma$ if the integral exists. Let $r=|z|^{-1}, \varepsilon=\left(\delta-\delta^{\prime}\right) / 2$ and choose a contour $\gamma=\gamma_{r, \delta-\varepsilon}=\gamma_{r, \delta-\varepsilon}^{1} \cup \gamma_{r, \delta-\varepsilon}^{2} \cup \gamma_{r, \delta-\varepsilon}^{3}$ (see Figure 6.2) with

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \gamma_{r, \delta-\varepsilon}^{1}=\left\{s \mathrm{e}^{-\mathrm{i}(\pi / 2+\delta-\varepsilon)}: s \in(\infty, r)\right\}, \\
& \gamma_{r, \delta-\varepsilon}^{3}=\left\{s \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i}(\pi / 2+\delta-\varepsilon)}: s \in(r, \infty)\right\}, \\
& \gamma_{r, \delta-\varepsilon}^{2}=\left\{r \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} s}: s \in(-(\pi / 2+\delta-\varepsilon),(\pi / 2+\delta-\varepsilon))\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

For $\mu \in \gamma_{r, \delta-\varepsilon}^{3}$ we have $\arg (\mu z)=\arg (\mu)+\arg (z) \in(\pi / 2+\varepsilon, 3 \pi / 2-\varepsilon)$. Since $\cos (\varphi) \leq \cos (\pi / 2+\varepsilon)=-\sin \varepsilon<0, \varphi \in(\pi / 2+\varepsilon, 3 \pi / 2-\varepsilon)$, it follows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Re}(\mu z)=|\mu z| \cos (\arg (\mu z)) \leq-|\mu z| \sin \varepsilon \tag{6.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

It is easy to check that (6.4) holds also for $\mu \in \gamma_{r, \delta-\varepsilon}^{1}$. For $\mu \in \gamma_{r, \delta-\varepsilon}^{2}$ we obtain

$$
\operatorname{Re}(\mu z) \leq|\mu z|=1
$$

Since $A$ is sectorial, we obtain, using estimate (6.2),

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\left\|\mathrm{e}^{\mu z} R(\mu, A)\right\| \leq \mathrm{e}^{\operatorname{Re}(\mu z)}\|R(\mu, A)\| \leq \frac{C_{\varepsilon}}{|\mu|} \mathrm{e}^{-|\mu z| \sin \varepsilon}, & \mu \in \gamma_{r, \delta-\varepsilon}^{1} \cup \gamma_{r \delta-\varepsilon}^{3}, \\
\left\|\mathrm{e}^{\mu z} R(\mu, A)\right\| \leq \mathrm{e} \frac{C_{\varepsilon}}{|\mu|} \leq \mathrm{e}|z| C, & \mu \in \gamma_{r \delta-\varepsilon}^{2}
\end{array}
$$

For the integral this yields
$\left\|\int_{\gamma} \mathrm{e}^{\mu z} R(\mu, A) \mathrm{d} \mu\right\| \leq \int_{\gamma}\left\|\mathrm{e}^{\mu z} R(\mu, A)\right\| \mathrm{d} \mu$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \leq 2 \int_{r}^{\infty}\left\|\mathrm{e}^{-s|z| \sin \varepsilon} \frac{C_{\varepsilon}}{s}\right\| \mathrm{d} s+\int_{-(\pi / 2+\delta-\varepsilon)}^{\pi / 2+\delta-\varepsilon} \mathrm{e}|z| C_{\varepsilon}\left|\mathrm{i} \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} s}\right| \mathrm{d} s \\
& =2 \int_{1}^{\infty}\left\|\mathrm{e}^{-s \sin \varepsilon} \frac{C_{\varepsilon}}{s}\right\| \mathrm{d} s+2(\pi / 2+\delta-\varepsilon) \mathrm{e} C_{\varepsilon}<\infty
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence $T(z)$ is well-defined and uniformly bounded in the sector $\Sigma_{\delta^{\prime}}$ because the right-hand-side does not depend on $z \in \Sigma_{\delta^{\prime}}$.
(ii) The integrand in (6.2) is analytic and, as in (i), it can be shown that the integrals of the derivatives exist.
(iii) Let $z_{1}, z_{2} \in \Sigma_{\delta}$ and choose $\delta^{\prime} \in(0, \delta)$ such that $z_{1}, z_{2} \in \Sigma_{\delta^{\prime}}$. Choose $\gamma=\gamma_{1, \delta-\varepsilon}$ with $\varepsilon=\left(\delta-\delta^{\prime}\right) / 2$ as before and let $\gamma^{\prime}=\gamma+c$ with $c>0$ large enough such that $\gamma \cap \gamma^{\prime}=\emptyset$. Then, using the resolvent identity $R(\mu, A) R(\lambda, A)=(\lambda-\mu)^{-1}[R(\mu, A)-$ $R(\lambda, A)]$ :

$$
\begin{aligned}
T\left(z_{1}\right) T\left(z_{2}\right)= & \frac{1}{(2 \pi \mathrm{i})^{2}} \int_{\gamma} \int_{\gamma^{\prime}} \mathrm{e}^{\mu z_{1}} \mathrm{e}^{\lambda z_{2}} R(\mu, A) R(\lambda, A) \mathrm{d} \mu \mathrm{~d} \lambda \\
= & \frac{1}{(2 \pi \mathrm{i})^{2}} \int_{\gamma} \int_{\gamma^{\prime}} \mathrm{e}^{\mu z_{1}} \mathrm{e}^{\lambda z_{2}}(\lambda-\mu)^{-1}[R(\mu, A)-R(\lambda, A)] \mathrm{d} \lambda \mathrm{~d} \mu \\
= & \frac{1}{(2 \pi \mathrm{i})^{2}} \int_{\gamma} \mathrm{e}^{\mu z_{1}} R(\mu, A) \int_{\gamma^{\prime}}(\lambda-\mu)^{-1} \mathrm{e}^{\lambda z_{2}} \mathrm{~d} \lambda \mathrm{~d} \mu \\
& -\frac{1}{(2 \pi \mathrm{i})^{2}} \int_{\gamma^{\prime}} \mathrm{e}^{\lambda z_{2}} R(\lambda, A) \int_{\gamma}(\lambda-\mu)^{-1} \mathrm{e}^{\mu z_{1}} \mathrm{~d} \mu \mathrm{~d} \lambda \\
= & \frac{1}{2 \pi \mathrm{i}} \int_{\gamma} \mathrm{e}^{\mu z_{2}} R(\mu, A) \mathrm{e}^{\mu z_{1}} \mathrm{~d} \mu=T\left(z_{1}+z_{2}\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

because $\int_{\gamma^{\prime}}(\mu-\lambda)^{-1} \mathrm{e}^{\lambda z_{2}} \mathrm{~d} \lambda=2 \pi \mathrm{i} \mathrm{e}^{\mu z_{2}}$ and $\int_{\gamma}(\mu-\lambda)^{-1} \mathrm{e}^{\mu z_{1}} \mathrm{~d} \mu=0$ by Cauchy's integral formula (if the contours are closed "to the left at infinity" with a piece of circle).
(iv) Again, let $\delta^{\prime} \in(0, \delta)$ and $\varepsilon=\left(\delta-\delta^{\prime}\right) / 2$. Because of (i), (ii) and because $A$ is densely defined, it suffices to show

$$
\lim _{z \rightarrow 0} T(z) x-x=0, \quad x \in \mathcal{D}(A)
$$

Choose again $\gamma=\gamma_{1, \delta-\varepsilon}$ as before. Cauchy's integral formula yields

$$
\int_{\gamma} \frac{\mathrm{e}^{\mu z}}{\mu} \mathrm{~d} \mu=\mathrm{e}^{0}=1,
$$

hence

$$
T(z) x-x=\int_{\gamma} \mathrm{e}^{\mu z}\left(R(\mu, A)-\frac{1}{\mu}\right) x \mathrm{~d} \mu=\int_{\gamma} \mathrm{e}^{\mu z} \mu^{-1} R(\mu, A) A x \mathrm{~d} \mu .
$$

The norm of the integrand can be estimated as follows:

$$
\left\|\mu^{-1} \mathrm{e}^{\mu z} R(A, \mu) A x\right\| \leq \begin{cases}\|A x\||\mu|^{-2} C_{\varepsilon} \mathrm{e}^{-|\mu z| \sin \varepsilon} & \text { for } \mu \in \gamma_{1, \delta-\varepsilon}^{1} \cup \gamma_{1, \delta-\varepsilon}^{3}, \\ \|A x\||\mu|^{-2} \mathrm{e} C_{\varepsilon}, & \text { for } \mu \in \gamma_{1, \delta-\varepsilon}^{2},\end{cases}
$$

Hence the integrand can be bounded by an integrable function, therefore, by Lebesgue's theorem of dominated convergence,

$$
\lim _{\substack{z z 0^{0} \\ z \in \Sigma_{\delta^{\prime}}}} T(z) x-x=\int_{\gamma} \lim _{\substack{z \rightarrow \Sigma_{\delta^{\prime}}^{0}}} \mathrm{e}^{\mu z} \mu^{-1} R(\mu, A) A x \mathrm{~d} \mu=\int_{\gamma} \mu^{-1} R(\mu, A) A x \mathrm{~d} \mu=0 .
$$

The last equality, again, is a consequence of Cauchy's integral theorem if the contour $\gamma$ is closed on the right side.
(v) From (iv) we obtain that $(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ is a strongly continuous semigroup. Let $B$ be the generator of $(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$. If $\lambda$ is large enough, then $\lambda \in \rho(A) \cap \rho(B)$ (fo instance choose $\lambda=\left|\omega_{0}\right|+1$ where $\omega_{0}$ is the growth bound of $\left.(T(t))_{t \geq 0}\right)$. For the proof of $A=B$ we show $R(\lambda, A)=R(\lambda, B)$. By Theorem 5.28

$$
R(B, \lambda) x=\lim _{t_{0} \rightarrow \infty} \int_{0}^{t_{0}} \mathrm{e}^{-\lambda s} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s
$$

For $t_{0}>0$ and the contour $\gamma=\gamma_{1}$ as above, Fubini's theorem shows that
$\int_{0}^{t_{0}} \mathrm{e}^{-\lambda s} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s=\frac{1}{2 \pi \mathrm{i}} \int_{0}^{t_{0}} \int_{\gamma} \mathrm{e}^{-\lambda s} \mathrm{e}^{\mu s} R(\mu, A) x \mathrm{~d} \mu \mathrm{~d} s$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& =\int_{\gamma} \frac{1}{2 \pi \mathrm{i}} \int_{0}^{t_{0}} \mathrm{e}^{-\lambda s} \mathrm{e}^{\mu s} R(\mu, A) x \mathrm{~d} s \mathrm{~d} \mu \\
& =\frac{1}{2 \pi \mathrm{i}} \int_{\gamma}(\mu-\lambda)^{-1}\left(\mathrm{e}^{(\mu-\lambda) t_{0}}-1\right) R(\mu, A) x \mathrm{~d} \mu \xrightarrow{t_{0} \rightarrow \infty} R(\lambda, A) x,
\end{aligned}
$$

because (again by Cauchy's integral theorem, close right)

$$
\int_{\gamma}(\mu-\lambda)^{-1} R(\mu, A) x \mathrm{~d} \mu=R(\lambda, A)
$$

and because for $\operatorname{Re}(\mu-\lambda)<0$

$$
\left\|\int_{\gamma}(\mu-\lambda)^{-1} \mathrm{e}^{(\mu-\lambda) t_{0}} R(\mu, A) x \mathrm{~d} \mu\right\| \leq \mathrm{e}^{-t_{0}}\|x\| \int_{\gamma}|\mu-\lambda|^{-1} \frac{C_{\varepsilon}}{|\mu|}|\mathrm{d} \mu| \longrightarrow 0
$$

for $t_{0} \rightarrow \infty$.
Note that the proposition shows that the generator of an analytic continuous semigroup is unique because it is the unique generator of the strongly continuous semi$\operatorname{group}(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$.

Example 6.5. If $H$ is a Hilbert space and $A$ is selfadjoint and dissipative linea operator on $H$, then $A$ is sectorial with arbitrary angle $\delta \in(0, \pi / 2)$. In particular, $A$ generates an analytic semigroup with angle $\delta \in(0, \pi / 2)$
Proof. By assumption, $W(A) \subset(-\infty, 0]$ (because $A$ is sectorial and selfadjoint), hence $\mathbb{C} \backslash(-\infty, 0] \subset \rho(A)$ (because $A$ is selfadjoint and the defect index of $A$ is constant in connected components of $\mathbb{C} \backslash W(A))$. Fix $\delta \in(0, \pi / 2)$ arbitrary. It remains to prove the resolvent estimate (6.2) for $\lambda \in \Sigma_{\pi / 2+\delta}$. Since $\lambda \in \Sigma_{\pi / 2+\delta}$ there exist $\rho>0$ and $\vartheta \in(-\pi / 2-\delta, \pi / 2+\delta)$ such that $\lambda=\rho \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \vartheta}$. For $x \in H$ let $u=R(\lambda, A) x$, hence $\rho \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \vartheta} u-A u=x$. Multiplication by $\mathrm{e}^{-\mathrm{i} \vartheta / 2}$ and scalar multiplication by $u$ yields

$$
\rho \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \vartheta / 2}\|u\|^{2}-\mathrm{e}^{-\mathrm{i} \vartheta / 2}\langle A u, u\rangle=\mathrm{e}^{-\mathrm{i} \vartheta / 2}\langle x, u\rangle .
$$

Taking the real part on both sides, leads to

$$
\rho\|u\|^{2} \underbrace{\cos (\vartheta / 2)}_{\in(\cos (\delta / 2), 1)}-\underbrace{\langle A u, u\rangle \cos (\vartheta / 2)}_{\leq 0}=\operatorname{Re}\left(\mathrm{e}^{-\mathrm{i} \vartheta / 2}\langle x, u\rangle\right) \leq\|x\|\|u\|
$$

$$
\Longrightarrow \quad\|R(\lambda, A) x\|=\|u\| \leq \frac{\|x\|}{\rho \cos (\delta / 2)}=\frac{\|x\|}{|\lambda| \cos (\delta / 2)} .
$$

Example 6.6. - Consider the differential operator $A$ defined by $A f=f^{\prime \prime}, f \in$ $\mathcal{D}(A)=W^{2,2}(\mathbb{R})$ on $X=L_{2}(\mathbb{R})$. Then $A$ generates an analytic semigroup on $L_{2}(\mathbb{R})$.

- Translation semigroup: $X=L_{p}(\mathbb{R}), \mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ with $T(t) f=f(t+\cdot)$ is not an analytic semigroup because its generator $A$ is $A f=f^{\prime}, f \in \mathcal{D}(A)=$ $W^{1, p}(\mathbb{R})$. Since $\sigma(A)=\mathrm{i} \mathbb{R}, A$ is not sectorial (see Proposition ??).

Lemma 6.7. If $X$ is a Banach space and $\mathcal{T}=(T(z))_{z \in \Sigma_{\delta}}$ is an analytic semigroup on $X$ with generator $A$, then

$$
\text { (i) } \begin{aligned}
t>0, k \in \mathbb{N}, x \in X & \Longrightarrow \quad T(t) x \in \mathcal{D}\left(A^{k}\right) \text { and } \\
& A^{k} T(t) x=(A T(t / k))^{k} x, \\
t>0, k \in \mathbb{N}, x \in \mathcal{D}\left(A^{k}\right) & \Longrightarrow \quad A^{k} T(t) x=T(t) A^{k} .
\end{aligned}
$$

(ii) For every $x \in X$ the map $(0, \infty) \rightarrow X, t \mapsto T(t) x$ is infinitely differentiable with derivatives

$$
\frac{\mathrm{d}^{k}}{\mathrm{~d} t^{k}} T(t) x=A^{k} T(t) x, \quad k \in \mathbb{N} .
$$

Note that the assertions are true in the case of a strongly continuous semigroup only for $x \in \mathcal{D}(A)$.
Proof. (i) Let $t>0$ and $\delta^{\prime} \in(0, \delta)$. By assumption, $T$ is norm-differentiable in the sector $\Sigma_{\delta^{\prime}}$, so the limit for $h \rightarrow 0$ of

$$
\frac{1}{h}(T(t+h)-T(t)) x=\frac{1}{h}(T(h)-\mathrm{id}) T(t) x .
$$

Hence $T(t) x \in \mathcal{D}(A)$. We already saw in Proposition 5.25 that $A T(t) x=T(t) A x$ for $x \in \mathcal{D}(A)$. Because of

$$
A T(t) x=A T(t / 2) T(t / 2) x=T(t / 2) A T(t / 2) x \in \mathcal{D}(A)
$$

it follows that $T(t) x \in \mathcal{D}\left(A^{2}\right)$ and $A^{2} T(t) x=(A T(t / 2))^{2} x, x \in X, t>0$. Now the assertion follows by induction
(ii) Let $\varepsilon \in(0, t /(2 k))$. Then, by (i),

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\mathrm{d}^{k}}{\mathrm{~d} t^{k}} T(t) x & =\frac{\mathrm{d}^{k-1}}{\mathrm{~d} t^{k-1}} A T(t) x=\frac{\mathrm{d}^{k-1}}{\mathrm{~d} t^{k-1}} T(t-\varepsilon) A \underbrace{T(\varepsilon) x}_{\mathcal{D}(A)} \\
& =\ldots=T(t-k \varepsilon)(A T(\varepsilon))^{k} x=T(t-k \varepsilon) A^{k} T(k \varepsilon) x=A^{k} T(t) x
\end{aligned}
$$

Proposition 6.8 (Characterisation of analytic semigroups). Let $X$ be a $B a$ nach space and $A$ a linear operator on $X$. Then the following is equivalent:
(i) $A$ is sectorial.
(ii) A generates a bounded analytic semigroup $\mathcal{T}=(T(z))_{z \in \Sigma_{\delta} \cup\{0\}}$ on $X$.
(iii) A generates a bounded strongly continuous semigroup $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ on $X$, $\operatorname{rg}(T(t)) \subseteq \mathcal{D}(A)$ for all $t>0$, and

$$
C:=\sup \{\|t A T(t)\|: t>0\}<\infty .
$$

Proof. (i) $\Rightarrow$ (ii) Proposition 6.3.
(ii) $\Rightarrow$ (i) Let $\delta \in(0, \pi / 2]$ be the angle of $\mathcal{T}$. By assumption, $(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ is a strongly continuous semigroup with generator $A$. We have to show that $A$ is sectorial with angle $\delta$.

Choose $\alpha \in(-\delta, \delta)$ and define

$$
T_{\alpha}(t):=T\left(\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \alpha} t\right), \quad t \geq 0 .
$$

Clearly, $\mathcal{T}_{\alpha}=\left(T_{\alpha}(t)\right)_{t \geq 0}$ is a strongly continuous semigroup on $X$. Let $A_{\alpha}$ be the generator of $\mathcal{T}_{\alpha}$. We show that $A_{\alpha}=\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \alpha} A$. Let $\gamma_{\alpha}=\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \alpha} \gamma$. For $x \in X$, Theorem ?? and Cauchy's integral theorem show that

$$
\begin{aligned}
R(1, A) x & =\int_{0}^{\infty} \mathrm{e}^{-t} T(t) x \mathrm{~d} t=\int_{\gamma_{\alpha}} \mathrm{e}^{-\mu} T(\mu) x \mathrm{~d} \mu=\int_{0}^{\infty} \mathrm{e}^{-t \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \alpha}} T\left(\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \alpha} t\right) x \mathrm{~d} t \\
& =\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \alpha} \int_{0}^{\infty} \mathrm{e}^{-t \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \alpha}} T_{\alpha}(t) x \mathrm{~d} t=\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \alpha} R\left(\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \alpha}, A\right) x
\end{aligned}
$$

hence $x \in \mathcal{D}\left(A_{\alpha}\right)$ if and only if $x \in \mathcal{D}(A)$, and in this case $A_{\alpha} x=\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \alpha} A x$.
Since $A_{\alpha}$ is the generator of a strongly continuous semigroup, it follows that $\{\lambda \in$ $\mathbb{C}: \operatorname{Re}(\lambda)>0\} \subseteq \rho\left(A_{\alpha}\right)=\rho\left(\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \alpha} A\right)=\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \alpha} \rho(A)$. Hence also
$\rho(A) \supset \bigcup_{\alpha \in(-\delta, \delta)} \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \alpha}\{\lambda \in \mathbb{C}: \operatorname{Re}(\lambda)>0\}=\{\lambda \in \mathbb{C}:|\arg (\lambda)|<\pi / 2+\delta\}=\Sigma_{\pi / 2+\delta}$

It remains to show the resolvent estimate (6.2). Choose $\delta^{\prime} \in(0, \delta)$ and $\varepsilon>0$ such that $\delta-\delta^{\prime}>\varepsilon$. Since $\mathcal{T}$ is a bounded semigroup, there exists an $M \geq 1$ such that $\|T(z)\| \leq M$ for all $z \in \Sigma_{\delta^{\prime}+\varepsilon}$. Now fix $\lambda \in \Sigma_{\pi / 2+\delta^{\prime}}$ and choose $\alpha \in\left(-\delta^{\prime}-\varepsilon, \delta^{\prime}+\varepsilon\right)$ such that $\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \alpha} \lambda \in \Sigma_{\pi / 2-\varepsilon}$. It follows that
$\|R(\lambda, A)\|=\left\|R\left(\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \alpha} \lambda, \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \alpha} A\right)\right\|=\left\|R\left(\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \alpha} \lambda, A_{\alpha}\right)\right\| \leq \frac{M}{\operatorname{Re}\left(\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \alpha} \lambda\right)} \leq \frac{M}{|\lambda| \cos (\pi-\varepsilon)}$.

In the second to last inequality we applied the Hille-Phillips-Yosida theorem to $A_{\alpha}$ (note that $\left\|T_{\alpha}(t)\right\| \leq M$ for all $t \geq 0$ and that $\left.\operatorname{Re}\left(\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \alpha}\right) \lambda>0\right)$.

(ii) $\Rightarrow$ (iii) By assumption, $(T(t))_{t>0}$ is a strongly continuous semigroup on $X$ with generator $A$. Since $\mathcal{T}$ is norm-differentiable in every sector $\Sigma_{\delta^{\prime}}$ with $\delta^{\prime} \in(0, \delta)$, for every $t>0$ the limit

$$
\lim _{h \rightarrow 0} h^{-1}(T(t+h) x-T(t) x)=\lim _{h \rightarrow 0} h^{-1}(T(h)-\mathrm{id}) T(t) x
$$

exists, therefore $T(t) x \in \mathcal{D}(A)$. Define the contour $\gamma_{r, \delta^{\prime}}$ as in the proof of Proposition 6.3. Since $A$ is closed and, as we will show, $\int_{\gamma_{, s^{\prime}}} A \mathrm{e}^{t \mu} R(\mu, A) \mathrm{d} \mu$ exists, we obtain as in Proposition 6.3:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|A T(t)\|= & \left\|\int_{\gamma_{t-1}, s^{\prime}} A \mathrm{e}^{t \mu} R(\mu, A) \mathrm{d} \mu\right\|=\frac{1}{2 \pi}\left\|\int_{\gamma_{t-1, \delta^{\prime}}} \mathrm{e}^{t \mu}(\mu R(\mu, A)-1) \mathrm{d} \mu\right\| \\
= & \frac{1}{2 \pi} \| \int_{t^{-1}}^{\infty} \mathrm{e}^{t s \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \delta^{\prime}}}\left(\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \delta^{\prime}} s R\left(\mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \delta^{\prime}} s, A\right)-1\right) \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} \delta^{\prime}} \mathrm{d} s \\
& +\int_{\infty}^{t^{-1}} \mathrm{e}^{t s \mathrm{e}^{-\mathrm{i} \delta^{\prime}}}\left(\mathrm{e}^{-\mathrm{i} \delta^{\prime}} s R\left(\mathrm{e}^{-\mathrm{i} \delta^{\prime}} s, A\right)-1\right) \mathrm{e}^{-\mathrm{i} \delta^{\prime}} \mathrm{d} s \\
& +\int_{-\delta^{\prime}}^{\delta^{\prime}} \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{e} s}\left(t^{-1} \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} s} R\left(t^{-1} \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} s}, A\right)-1\right) \frac{\mathrm{i}}{t} \mathrm{e}^{\mathrm{i} s} \mathrm{~d} s \| \\
\leq & \frac{1}{\pi}\left\|\int_{t^{-1}}^{\infty} \mathrm{e}^{t s \cos \delta^{\prime}}\left(s \frac{M}{s}+1\right) \mathrm{d} s+\frac{1}{2 \pi} \int_{-\delta^{\prime}}^{\delta^{\prime}} \mathrm{e}\left(t^{-1} \frac{M}{t^{-1}}+1\right) t^{-1} \mathrm{~d} s\right\| \\
= & \frac{1}{t} \frac{1}{\pi} \int_{1}^{\infty} \mathrm{e}^{s \cos \delta^{\prime}}(M+1) \mathrm{d} s+\frac{1}{t} \frac{1}{2 \pi} \int_{-\delta^{\prime}}^{\delta^{\prime}} \mathrm{e}(M+1) \mathrm{d} s=\frac{C}{t},
\end{aligned}
$$

with a constant $C<\infty$ that does not depend on $t$.
(iii) $\Rightarrow$ (ii) Let $x \in X$. By Lemma 6.7, the map $(0, \infty) \rightarrow X, s \mapsto T(s) x$ is arbitarily differentiable and $\operatorname{rg}(T(s)) \subseteq \mathcal{D}\left(A^{\infty}\right)=\cap_{k=1}^{\infty} \mathcal{D}\left(A^{k}\right)$ for all $s>0$.

Moreover, Lemma 6.7 and the inequality $k^{k} \leq \mathrm{e}^{k} k$ ! show that
$\frac{1}{k!}\left\|\frac{\mathrm{d}^{k}}{\mathrm{~d} s^{k}} T(s)\right\|=\frac{1}{k!}\left\|A^{k} T(s)\right\|=\frac{1}{k!}\left\|(A T(s / k))^{k}\right\| \leq \frac{k^{k}}{s^{k} k!}\|s / k(A T(s / k))\|^{k} \leq \frac{C^{k} \mathrm{e}^{k}}{s^{k}}$.
For $t>0$ and $|h| \in(0, t)$ the Taylor expansion shows that
$T(t+h) x=\sum_{k=0}^{n} \frac{h^{k}}{k!} T^{(k)}(t) x+\frac{1}{n!} \int_{t}^{t+h}(t+h-s)^{n} T^{(n+1)}(s) x \mathrm{~d} s .=: \sum_{k=0}^{n} \frac{h^{k}}{k!} T^{(k)}(t) x+R_{n+1}(h)$
The integral term $R_{n+1}(h)$ can be estimated as follows:
$\left\|R_{n+1}(h)\right\| \leq \frac{\|x\|}{n!} \int_{t}^{t+h}|t+h-s|^{n}(n+1)!\left(\frac{C \mathrm{e}}{s}\right)^{k} \mathrm{~d} s \leq(n+1)\left(\frac{|h| C \mathrm{e}}{t-|h|}\right)^{n+1}$.
For $q \in(0,1)$ and $|h|<\frac{q t}{C e+1}$, we have that

$$
|h| \frac{C \mathrm{e}}{t-|h|} \leq \frac{q t C \mathrm{e}}{(C \mathrm{e}+1)\left(t-\frac{q t}{C \mathrm{e}+1}\right)}=\frac{q C \mathrm{e}}{C e+1-q} \leq q,
$$

so

$$
\left\|R_{n+1}(h)\right\| \leq(n+1) q^{n+1} \longrightarrow 0, \quad n \rightarrow \infty
$$

This leads to the Taylor expansion for $T(\cdot)$

$$
T(t+h) x=\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{h^{k}}{k!} T^{(k)}(t) x, \quad|h|<\frac{q t}{C \mathrm{e}+1} .
$$

The series converges also for $h \in \mathbb{C}$ with $|h|<\frac{q t}{C \mathrm{e}+1}$, hence $T$ has an analytic extension to $\Sigma_{\delta}$ with $\delta=\arctan \frac{1}{C \mathrm{e}+1}$.
It remains to be shown that the extension to every sector $\Sigma_{\delta^{\prime}}$ with $\delta^{\prime} \in(0, \delta)$ is bounded. If $z \in \Sigma_{\delta^{\prime}}$, then $|\operatorname{Im} z| \leq t \tan \delta^{\prime} \leq \frac{t q}{C \mathrm{e}+1}$, and consequently

$$
\begin{align*}
\|T(z)\| & =\|T(\operatorname{Re} z+\mathrm{i} \operatorname{Im} z)\| \leq \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{k!}\left\|T^{(k)}(\operatorname{Re} z)\right\||\operatorname{Im} z|^{k} \\
& \leq \sum_{k=0}^{\infty}\left(\frac{C \mathrm{e}}{t}\right)^{k}\left(\frac{q t}{C \mathrm{e}+1}\right)^{k} \leq \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} q^{k}=(1-q)^{-1}
\end{align*}
$$

## Not densely defined operators

In Proposition 6.3, we used that $A$ is densely defined only to prove that the generated semigroup $\mathcal{T}$ is strongly continuous. If we do not assume that $A$ is densely defined, then in Proposition 6.3, instead of (iv), the following:
(iv') For all $x \in \overline{\mathcal{D}(A)}$ the map $z \mapsto T(z) x$ is continuous in $\Sigma_{\delta^{\prime}} \cup\{0\}$ for every $\delta^{\prime} \in(0, \delta)$.
More precisely:
Proposition 6.9. Let $X$ be a Banach space, $A$ a linear operator on $X$ and $\delta \in$ Proposition 6.9. Let $X(A)$ and assume that for every $\varepsilon \in(0, \delta)$ there exists a constant $C_{\varepsilon}$ such that

$$
\|R(\lambda, A)\| \leq \frac{C_{\varepsilon}}{|\lambda|}, \quad \lambda \in \overline{\Sigma_{\pi / 2+\delta-\varepsilon}} \backslash\{0\}
$$

Then the claims (i)-(iii) from Proposition 6.3 hold. In addition:
(i) $\quad$ (a) $x \in \overline{\mathcal{D}(A)} \Longrightarrow \lim _{t \rightarrow 0} T(t) x=x$
(b) If the limit $y=\lim _{t \rightarrow 0} T(t) x$ exists, then $x \in \overline{\mathcal{D}(A)}$ and $y=x$.
(ii) (a) $x \in X, t \geq 0 \Longrightarrow \int_{0}^{t} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s \in \mathcal{D}(A)$ and $A \int_{0}^{t} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s=T(t) x-x$.
(b) If the fuction $s \mapsto A T(s) x$ in $(0, \varepsilon)$ is integrable for some $\varepsilon>0$, then

$$
A \int_{0}^{t} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s=\int_{0}^{t} A T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s
$$

(iii) (a) $x \in \mathcal{D}(A), A x \in \overline{\mathcal{D}(A)} \Longrightarrow \lim _{t \rightarrow 0} t^{-1}(T(t) x-x)=A x$,
(b) If the limit $y=\lim _{t \rightarrow 0} t^{-1}(T(t) x-x)$ exists, then $x \in \mathcal{D}(A), A x \in \overline{\mathcal{D}(A)}$ and $y=A x$.
(iv) $x \in \mathcal{D}(A), A x \in \overline{\mathcal{D}(A)} \Longrightarrow \lim _{t \rightarrow 0} A T(t) x=A x$.

Proof. (i) (a) was shown in Proposition 6.3 (iv). Assume that $x, y$ satisfy (b). Since $T(t) x \in \mathcal{D}(A)$ for all $t>0$ and $y=\lim _{t \backslash 0} T(t) x$, it follows that $y \in \overline{\mathcal{D}(A)}$. Now let $\lambda \in \rho(A)$. By (a), we obtain

$$
R(\lambda, A) y=\lim _{t \searrow 0} R(\lambda, A) T(t) x=\lim _{t \searrow 0} T(t) \underbrace{R(\lambda, A) x}_{\in \mathcal{D}(A)}=R(\lambda, A) x .
$$

(ii) (a) Let $\lambda \in \rho(A), x \in X$ and $t>0$. For $\varepsilon \in(0, t)$ it follows that $\int_{\varepsilon}^{t} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s=\int_{\varepsilon}^{t}(\lambda-A) R(\lambda, A) T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s=\lambda \int_{\varepsilon}^{t} R(\lambda, A) T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s-\int_{\varepsilon}^{t} A R(\lambda, A) T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s$

$$
=\lambda \int_{\varepsilon}^{t} R(\lambda, A) T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s-\int_{\varepsilon}^{t} \frac{d}{d s} T(s) R(\lambda, A) x \mathrm{~d} s
$$

$$
=\lambda \int_{\varepsilon}^{t} T(s) R(\lambda, A) x \mathrm{~d} s-T(t) R(\lambda, A) x+T(\varepsilon) R(\lambda, A) x \text {. }
$$

Hence the limit for $\varepsilon \rightarrow 0$ exists and

$$
\begin{aligned}
\int_{0}^{t} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s & =\lambda \int_{0}^{t} T(s) R(\lambda, A) x \mathrm{~d} s-R(\lambda, A) T(t) x+R(\lambda, A) T(0) x \\
& =\lambda R(\lambda, A) \int_{0}^{t} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s-R(\lambda, A)(T(t) x-x) \in \mathcal{D}(A)
\end{aligned}
$$

The claim follows from
$R(\lambda, A) A \int_{0}^{t} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s=(\lambda R(\lambda, A)-1) \int_{0}^{t} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s=R(\lambda, A)(T(t) x-x)$
(b) Let $x \in X$ and $\varepsilon>0$. Suppose that $s \mapsto T(s) x$ is integrable in $(0, \varepsilon)$. Then also $s \mapsto\|T(s) x\|$ is integrable in $(0, \varepsilon)$ and therefore the improper integral of $s \mapsto T(s) x$ in $(0, t)$ exists. So the claim follows from Theorem ??
(iii) (a) Shows that (ii) that

$$
\begin{aligned}
t^{-1}(T(t) x-x) & =t^{-1} A \int_{0}^{t} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s=t^{-1} \int_{0}^{t} A T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s \\
& =t^{-1} \int_{0}^{t} T(s) A x \mathrm{~d} s \xrightarrow{t \rightarrow 0} T(0) A x=A x
\end{aligned}
$$

because the integrand $T(\cdot) x$ is continuous in $[0, t]$ by (i) because $A x \in \overline{\mathcal{D}(A)}$.
(b) Let $x \in X$ such that the limit $y=\lim _{t \rightarrow 0} t^{-1}(T(t) x-x)$ exists. Then, for $\lambda \in \rho(A)$ :
$R(\lambda, A) y=\lim _{t \rightarrow 0} t^{-1} R(\lambda, A)(T(t) x-x)=\lim _{t \rightarrow 0} t^{-1} R(\lambda, A) A \int_{0}^{t} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s$
$=\lim _{t \rightarrow 0} t^{-1}(\lambda R(\lambda, A)-1) \int_{0}^{t} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s=(\lambda R(\lambda, A)-1) \lim _{t \rightarrow 0} t^{-1} \int_{0}^{t} T(s) x \mathrm{~d} s$ $\stackrel{(*)}{=}(\lambda R(\lambda, A)-1) x$
so $x \in \mathcal{D}(A)$ and $R(\lambda, A) y=R(\lambda, A) A x$. In (*) we used

$$
\lim _{t \searrow 0} t^{-1}(T(t) x-x) \text { exists } \Longrightarrow \lim _{t \searrow} T(t) x=x \Longrightarrow x \in \overline{\mathcal{D}(A)}
$$

$$
\Longrightarrow s \mapsto T(s) x \text { continuous in }[0, t] \text {. }
$$

## Connection with the Cauchy problem

Let $A$ as in the proposition above, $\mathcal{T}=(T(z))_{z \in \Sigma_{\delta}}$ se analytic semigroup generated by $A$ and $x_{0} \in X$. Consider the initial value problem

$$
\begin{equation*}
x^{\prime}(t)=A x(t), \quad t>0, \quad x(0)=x_{0} \tag{6.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

- $x_{0} \in X$ arbitrary Then $z \mapsto T(z) x_{0}$ is an analytic solution of $x^{\prime}=A x$ in the open sector $\Sigma_{\delta}$ and $T(z) x_{0} \in \mathcal{D}(A)$ for all $z \in \Sigma_{\delta}$
- $x_{0} \in \overline{\mathcal{D}(A)}$ : The solution $T(\cdot) x_{0}$ is continuous in 0 , hence it solves the initial value problem (6.5) for $t>0$.
- $x_{0} \in \mathcal{D}(A):$ The solution $T(\cdot) x_{0}$ is differentiable in 0 , hence it solves the initial value problem (6.5) for $t>0$

Remark. If $x_{0} \in X$, then by definition $T(0) x_{0}=x_{0}$, but $\lim _{t \backslash 0} T(t) x_{0}=x_{0}$ holds only if $x_{0} \in \mathcal{D}(A)$. But it is always true that
$\lim _{t \backslash 0} R(\lambda, A) T(t) x_{0}=R(\lambda, A) x_{0}, \quad \lambda \in \rho(A)$.

## Bibliography

[Den04] Robert Denk. Funktionalanalysis I. Universität Konstanz http://www.mathematik.uni-regensburg.de/broecker/index.html, 2004.
[DS88] Nelson Dunford and Jacob T. Schwartz. Linear operators. Part I. Wiley Classics Library. John Wiley \& Sons Inc., New York, 1988. General theory Classics Library. John Wiley \& Sons Inc., New York, 1988. General theory, the 1958 original, A Wiley-Interscience Publication.
[EN00] Klaus-Jochen Engel and Rainer Nagel. One-parameter semigroups for lin ear evolution equations, volume 194 of Graduate Texts in Mathematics. Springer-Verlag, New York, 2000. With contributions by S. Brendle, M Campiti, T. Hahn, G. Metafune, G. Nickel, D. Pallara, C. Perazzoli, A Rhandi, S. Romanelli and R. Schnaubelt.
[Kat95] Tosio Kato. Perturbation theory for linear operators. Classics in Mathematics. Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 1995. Reprint of the 1980 edition.
[Paz74] Amnon Pazy. Semi-groups of linear operators and applications to partial differential equations. Department of Mathematics, University of Mary land, College Park, Md., 1974. Department of Mathematics, University of Maryland, Lecture Note, No. 10
[RS80] Michael Reed and Barry Simon. Methods of modern mathematical physics. I. Academic Press Inc. [Harcourt Brace Jovanovich Publishers], New York, second edition, 1980. Functional analysis.
[Rud91] Walter Rudin. Functional analysis. International Series in Pure and Applied Mathematics. McGraw-Hill Inc., New York, second edition, 1991.
[Tay58] Angus E. Taylor. Introduction to functional analysis. John Wiley \& Sons Inc., New York, 1958
[Wei80] Joachim Weidmann. Linear operators in Hilbert spaces, volume 68 of Grad uate Texts in Mathematics. Springer-Verlag, New York, 1980. Translated from the German by Joseph Szücs

Wer00] Dirk Werner. Funktionalanalysis. Springer-Verlag, Berlin, extended edition, 2000.

## Problem Sheets

1. Let $H$ be a Hilbert space. If $\left(x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ is a sequence of pairwise orthogonal vectors in $H$, then the following are equivalent:
(a) $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} x_{n}$ converges in the norm topology of $H$.
(b) $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty}\left\|x_{n}\right\|^{2}<\infty$.
(c) $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty}\left\langle x_{n}, y\right\rangle$ converges for every $y \in H$.
2. Let $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ be orthogonal projections acting on the Hilbert space $H$. Then we have

$$
\left\|P_{1}-P_{2}\right\|=\max \left\{\rho_{12}, \rho_{21}\right\}
$$

where

$$
\rho_{j k}:=\sup \left\{\left\|P_{j} x\right\|: x \in \operatorname{rg}\left(P_{k}\right)^{\perp},\|x\| \leq 1\right\} .
$$

3. If $P$ and $Q$ are orthogonal projection on the Hilbert space $H$ such that $\|P-Q\|<1$, then we have

$$
\operatorname{dim}(\operatorname{rg} P)=\operatorname{dim}(\operatorname{rg} Q), \quad \operatorname{dim}(\operatorname{rg}(I-P))=\operatorname{dim}(\operatorname{rg}(I-Q)) .
$$

4. Define the right shift operator $S$ on $\ell_{2}(\mathbb{Z})$ by

$$
(S x)_{k}=x_{k-1}, \quad k \in \mathbb{Z},
$$

where $x=\left(x_{k}\right)_{k=-\infty}^{\infty}$ is in $\ell_{2}(\mathbb{Z})$. Find $\sigma_{\mathrm{p}}(S), \sigma_{\mathrm{c}}(S), \sigma_{\mathrm{r}}(S)$.

## Functions of bounded variation; spectral resolution.

1. Let $\alpha \in \operatorname{BV}[a, b], f \in I[a, b]$ and define $K:[a, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{K}$ by $K(x):=\int_{a}^{x} f(t) \mathrm{d} \alpha(t)$ for $x \in(a, b]$ and $K(a):=0$. Show:
(a) $K \in \mathrm{BV}[a, b]$.
(b) If $\alpha$ is right continuous, then so is $K$.
(c) $\int_{a}^{b} g(t) \mathrm{d} K(t)=\int_{a}^{b}(f g)(t) \mathrm{d} \alpha(t)$ for all $g \in I[a, b]$.
2. Let $H$ be a Hilbert space and $T \in L(H)$ a compact selfadjoint operator with pairwise distinct eigenvalues $\mu_{j}$ and let $P_{j}$ be the orthogonal projections on the corresponding eigenspaces. Show that $\left(E_{\lambda}\right)_{\lambda \in \mathbb{R}}$ is a spectral resolution where

$$
E_{\lambda} x:=\left\{\begin{array}{ll}
\sum_{\lambda_{j} \leq \lambda} P_{j} x, & \lambda<0, \\
x-\sum_{\lambda_{j}>\lambda} P_{j} x, & \lambda \geq 0,
\end{array} \quad \lambda \in \mathbb{R}, x \in H\right.
$$

3. Let $H$ be a Hilbert space, $\left(E_{\lambda}\right)_{\lambda \in \mathbb{R}}$ a spectral resolution on $H$ and $\varphi: \mathbb{R} \rightarrow(a, b)$ Let $H$ be a Hilbert space, $\left(E_{\lambda}\right) \lambda \in \mathbb{R}$ a spectrac resolution on $H$ and $\varphi: \mathbb{R} \rightarrow(a, b)$
a continuous monotonically increasing bijection. Moreover assume that $E_{a}=0$ and $E_{b-0}=E_{b}=I$. Show that $(F(\lambda))_{\lambda \in \mathbb{R}}$ is a spectral resolution on $H$ where

$$
F_{\lambda}:=E_{\varphi(\lambda)}, \quad \lambda \in \mathbb{R} .
$$

4. Let $H$ be a Hilbert space, $\left(E_{\lambda}\right)_{\lambda \in \mathbb{R}}$ a spectral resolution on $H$ and $f, g \in I[a, b]$. Show:
(a) $\left\langle\left(\int_{a}^{b} f(\lambda) \mathrm{d} E_{\lambda}\right) x, y\right\rangle=\int_{a}^{b} f(\lambda)\left\langle E_{\lambda} x, y\right\rangle, \quad x, y \in H$;
(b) $\int_{a}^{b} f(\lambda) \mathrm{d} E_{\lambda}=0$ for $f \equiv 0, \quad \int_{a}^{b} f(\lambda) \mathrm{d} E_{\lambda}=\int_{a}^{b} \mathrm{~d} E_{\lambda}=E_{b}-E_{a}$ for
(c) $E_{\mu} \int_{a}^{b} f(\lambda) \mathrm{d} E_{\lambda}=\int_{a}^{\mu} f(\lambda) \mathrm{d} E_{\lambda}, \quad a \leq \mu \leq b ;$
(d) $\left(\int_{a}^{b} f(\lambda) \mathrm{d} E_{\lambda}\right)\left(\int_{a}^{b} g(\lambda) \mathrm{d} E_{\lambda}\right)=\int_{a}^{b} f(\lambda) g(\lambda) \mathrm{d} E_{\lambda}$;
(e) $\left(\int_{a}^{b} f(\lambda) \mathrm{d} E_{\lambda}\right)^{*}=\int_{a}^{b} \overline{f(\lambda)} \mathrm{d} E_{\lambda}$;
(f) $\left\|\int_{a}^{b} f(\lambda) \mathrm{d} E_{\lambda} x\right\|^{2}=\int_{a}^{b}|f(\lambda)|^{2} \mathrm{~d}\left\|E_{\lambda} x\right\|^{2}, \quad x \in H$.

## Spectral theorem.

1. Let $H, \varphi: \mathbb{R} \rightarrow(a, b),\left(E_{\lambda}\right)_{\lambda \in \mathbb{R}}$ and $\left(F_{\lambda}\right)_{\lambda \in \mathbb{R}}$ be as in Problem Sheet 2, Exercise 3.

Moreover let $f:(a, b) \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ such that $f\left[\left[a_{0}, b_{0}\right] \in I\left[a_{0}, b_{0}\right]\right.$ for every compact subinterval $\left[a_{0}, b_{0}\right]$ of $(a, b)$. Show
(a) $\int_{\varphi(\alpha)}^{\varphi(\beta)} f(\lambda) \mathrm{d} E_{\lambda}=\int_{\alpha}^{\beta}(f \circ \varphi)(\lambda) \mathrm{d} F_{\lambda} \quad$ for all $[\alpha, \beta] \subseteq \mathbb{R}$.
(b) Let $x \in H$. Then

$$
\int_{a+0}^{b-0} f(\lambda) \mathrm{d} E_{\lambda} x:=\lim _{\substack{\left.\lambda a a \\ \lambda_{2} \not\right)_{b}}} \int_{\lambda_{1}}^{\lambda_{2}} f(\lambda) \mathrm{d} E_{\lambda}
$$

exists if and only if

$$
\int_{-\infty}^{\infty}(f \circ \varphi)(\lambda) \mathrm{d} F_{\lambda} x:=\lim _{\substack{\lambda,-\infty \\ \lambda_{2} \nearrow \infty}} \int_{\lambda_{1}}^{\lambda_{2}}(f \circ \varphi)(\lambda) \mathrm{d} F_{\lambda} x
$$

exists.
2. Let $a:[0,1] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ be continuous and $A: L_{2}(0,1) \rightarrow L_{2}(0,1)$ be defined by

$$
(A x)(t):=a(t) x(t), \quad t \in(0,1), \quad x \in L_{2}(0,1) .
$$

(a) Show that $A$ is selfadjoint.
(b) Find $m:=\inf _{x \in H,\|x\|=1}(A x, x)$ and $M:=\sup _{x \in H,\|x\|=1}(A x, x)$.
(c) Find the spectral resolution of $A$.
3. Let $A$ and $B$ be bounded selfadjoint operators on a Hilbert space $H$ with spectra resolutions $\left(E_{A}(\lambda)\right)_{\lambda \in \mathbb{R}}$ and $\left(E_{B}(\lambda)\right)_{\lambda \in \mathbb{R}}$. Show that $\operatorname{dim} E_{A}(\lambda) \leq \operatorname{dim} E_{B}(\lambda)$ for every $\lambda \in \mathbb{R}$ if $A \geq B$.
4. Let $H$ be a Hilbert space and $A \in L(H)$.
(a) Show that $\operatorname{Exp}(A):=\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{n!} A^{n}$ converges in the operator norm. Show that $(\operatorname{Exp}(A))^{*}=\operatorname{Exp}\left(A^{*}\right)$. In particular, $\operatorname{Exp}(A)$ is selfadjoint and $(\operatorname{Exp}(\mathrm{i} A))^{*}=\operatorname{Exp}(-\mathrm{i} A)$ if $A$ is selfadjoint
(b) Show that $\operatorname{Exp}(A)=\exp (A)$ for selfadjoint $A$ where $\exp (A)$ is defined via the continuous functional calculus.
${ }^{1}$ using the notation $\operatorname{dim} P:=\operatorname{dim}(\operatorname{rg} P)$ for an orthogonal projection $P$

1. Let $A$ be a bounded selfadjoint operator on a complex Hilbert space $H$ with spectral resolution $\left(E_{\lambda}\right)_{\lambda \in \mathbb{R}}$. Show that $A$ is compact if and only if for every $\varepsilon>0$ the projection $E(\{|\lambda|>\varepsilon\})$ has finite rank
2. Let $R$ be the right shift operator on $\ell_{2}(\mathbb{N})$, that is

$$
S\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, x_{3}, \ldots\right)=\left(0, x_{1}, x_{2}, x_{3}, \ldots\right)
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \text { for } x=\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, x_{3}, \ldots\right) \in \ell_{2}(\mathbb{N}) \text {. Is there an operator } A \in L(\ell(\mathbb{N})) \text { such that } \\
& A^{2}=S \text { ? }
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
A^{2}=S ?
$$

3. Let $H$ be a complex Hilbert space, $A$ a selfadjoint operator such that $A^{-1}$ exists and is densely defined. Let $U$ be its Cayley transform. Show:
(a) $A^{-1}$ is symmetric.
(b) The Cayley transform of $A^{-1}$ is $-U^{-1}$
(c) $A^{-1}$ is selfadjoint.
4. Let $\left(e_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ be an orthonormal basis of a complex Hilbert space $H$ and $\left(\alpha_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \subseteq$ $\mathbb{R}$. Define the operator $A$ by
$\mathcal{D}:=\left\{x \in H: \sum_{n=1}^{\infty}\left|\alpha_{n}\left\langle x, \mathrm{e}_{n}\right\rangle\right|^{2}<\infty\right\}, \quad A x:=\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \alpha_{n}\left\langle x, \mathrm{e}_{n}\right\rangle \mathrm{e}_{n} \quad$ for $x \in \mathcal{D}$.
(a) Show that $A$ is well-defined, closed and symmetric.
(b) Find the Cayley transform of $A$.
5. (a) Is the right shift on $\ell_{2}(\mathbb{N})$ the Cayley transform of a closed symmetric operator $A$ ? If so, find $A$ and its deficiency indices $\operatorname{dim}\left(\operatorname{rg}(A \pm \mathrm{i})^{\perp}\right)$.
(b) Is the left shift on $\ell_{2}(\mathbb{N})$ the Cayley transform of a closed symmetric operator $B$ ? If so, find $B$ and its deficiency indices $\operatorname{dim}\left(\operatorname{rg}(B \pm \mathrm{i})^{\perp}\right)$.
6. Let $\left(E_{\lambda}\right)_{\lambda \in \mathbb{R}}$ be a spectral resolution on a complex Hilbert space $H$. Let $x \in H$ and $f \in C(\mathbb{R}, \mathbb{C})$. Then the following is equivalent:
(a) $\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} f(\lambda) \mathrm{d} E_{\lambda} x$ exists.
(b) $\int_{-\infty}^{\infty}|f(\lambda)|^{2} \mathrm{~d}\left\langle E_{\lambda} x, x\right\rangle$ exists
(that is, $f \in L_{2}\left(\mathbb{R}, \mathrm{~d} \alpha_{x}\right)$ where $\alpha_{x}(\lambda)=\left\langle E_{\lambda} x, x\right\rangle$ for $\lambda \in \mathbb{R}$ ).
(c) The map $\varphi: H \rightarrow \mathbb{C}, \varphi(y)=\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} f(\lambda) \mathrm{d}\left\langle E_{\lambda} x, y\right\rangle$ is a bounded anti-linear functional.
7. Let $A$ be a selfadjoint operator on a complex Hilbert space $H$ with spectral resolution $\left(E_{\lambda}\right)_{\lambda \in \mathbb{R}}$. Then
$s-\lim _{\varepsilon \searrow 0} \frac{1}{2 \pi \mathrm{i}} \int_{a}^{b}\left[(A-\lambda-\mathrm{i} \varepsilon)^{-1}-(A-\lambda+\mathrm{i} \varepsilon)^{-1}\right] \mathrm{d} \lambda=\frac{1}{2}(E([a, b])+E((a, b)))$.
8. Use Stone's formula to find the spectral resolution of at least one of the following operators:
(a) $T=\left(\begin{array}{ll}1 & 0 \\ 0 & 2\end{array}\right)$ on $\mathbb{C}^{2}$.
(b) Let $(X, \mu)$ be a measure space. For a $\mu$-measurable function $g: X \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ define the maximal multiplication operator $T_{g}$ on $L_{2}(X)$ by
$\mathcal{D}\left(T_{g}\right):=\left\{f \in L_{2}(X): f g \in L_{2}(X)\right\}, \quad T_{g} f:=g f \quad$ for $x \in \mathcal{D}\left(T_{g}\right)$.
9. Let $(\Omega, \Sigma, \mu)$ be a $\sigma$-finite measure space, $X, Y$ Banach spaces and $f: \Omega \rightarrow X$ Bochner-integrable. Let $T \in L(H)$. Show that $T f$ is also Bochner-integrable and that

$$
T \int_{\Omega} f \mathrm{~d} \mu=\int_{\Omega} T f \mathrm{~d} \mu
$$

2. Let $H$ be a complex Hilbert space and $T(H \rightarrow H)$ a selfadjoint linear operator Let $a, b \in \rho(T) \cap \mathbb{R}$ and $\Gamma$ a positively oriented Jordan curve which encloses $(a, b) \cap \sigma(T)$ and the rest of the spectrum of $T$ lies outside of $\Gamma$. Then

$$
E(b)-E(a)=\frac{1}{2 \pi \mathrm{i}} \oint_{\Gamma}(\lambda-T)^{-1} \mathrm{~d} \lambda .
$$


3. Let $H$ be a complex Hilbert space, $T(H \rightarrow H)$ a selfadjoint linear operato with spectral resolution $\left(E_{t}\right)_{t \in \mathbb{R}}$ and $\lambda \in \mathbb{C}$. Show that the following is equivalent:
(a) $\lambda \in \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}(T)$
(b) There exists a sequence $\left(x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \subseteq \mathcal{D}(T)$ such that $x_{n} \nrightarrow 0$ and $(T-\lambda) x_{n} \rightarrow$ 0 for $n \rightarrow \mathbb{N}$ and every such sequence contains a convergent subsequence.
(c) $0 \neq \operatorname{dim}(\operatorname{rg} E(\{\lambda\})<\infty$ and there exists an $\varepsilon>0$ such that $E((\lambda-\varepsilon, \lambda+$ $\varepsilon))=E(\{\lambda\})$.
4. Let $H$ be a complex Hilbert space and $T(H \rightarrow H)$ a selfadjoint linear operator Show that $\sigma(T)=\sigma_{\text {ess }}(T) \cup \sigma_{\mathrm{d}}(T)$.

1. Let $H$ be a complex Hilbert space and $S, T$ selfadjoint linear operators on H.
(a) Let $z \in \rho(T)$ and $\lambda \in \mathbb{C} \backslash\{z\}$. Show that $\lambda \in \sigma_{\text {ess }}(T)$ if and only if there exists a sequence $\left(x_{n}\right)_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \subset \mathcal{D}(T)$ such that

$$
x_{n} \nrightarrow 0, \quad x_{n} \xrightarrow{w} 0 \quad \text { and } \quad\left((T-z)^{-1}-(\lambda-z)^{-1}\right) x_{n} \rightarrow 0 \quad \text { for } n \rightarrow \infty .
$$

(b) Assume that there exists a $z \in \rho(S) \cap \rho(T)$ such that $(S-z)^{-1}-(T-z)^{-1}$ is compact. Show that then $\sigma_{\text {ess }}(S)=\sigma_{\text {ess }}(T)$
2. Let $H$ be a complex Hilbert space and $S(H \rightarrow H)$ be a closable linear operator Show that the deficiency numbers are constant in connected components of its domain of regularity $\Gamma(S)$.

1. Let $X, Y, Z$ be Banach spaces and $T(X \rightarrow Y), S(X \rightarrow Z)$ linear operators Show that $S$ is $T$-bounded if and only if $\mathcal{D}(S) \supseteq \mathcal{D}(T)$ and there exist $\alpha, \beta \geq 0$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|S x\|^{2} \leq \alpha^{2}\|x\|^{2}+\beta^{2}\|T x\|^{2}, \quad x \in \mathcal{D}(T) . \tag{*}
\end{equation*}
$$

Show that the infimum over all $\beta>0$ such that ( $*$ ) holds for some $\alpha \mathrm{e} 0$ is equal to the $T$-bound of $S$.

Hint. Show that $2 x y \leq c^{2} x^{2}+c^{-2} y^{2}$ for $c, x, y \in \mathbb{R}, c \neq 0$.
2. Let $X$ be a Banach spaces and $T(X \rightarrow X)$ a closed linear operator. Let $S(X \rightarrow$ $X$ ) with $\mathcal{D}(S) \supseteq \mathcal{D}(T)$ and $z \in \rho(T)$. Show that $S$ is $T$-compact if and only if $S(T-z)^{-1}$ is compact
3. Let $S$ and $T$ be closed operators on a Banach space $X$. Show that $(S-z)^{-1}-$ $(T-z)^{-1}$ is compact for some $z \in \rho(S) \cap \rho(T)$ if and only if it is compact for all $z \in \rho(S) \cap \rho(T)$.
4. Recall: If $T$ is a closed operator between Hilbert spaces $H_{1}$ and $H_{2}$ and $S$ is $T$-compact, then $S$ has $T$-bound 0 .

Show that there exist Hilbert spaces $H_{1}, H_{2}$, a linear operator $T\left(H_{1} \rightarrow H_{2}\right)$ and a $T$-compact operator $S$ with $T$-bound 1 .
Hint. Consider an unbounded linear functional on $H_{1}$.

1. Let $\Omega$ be a domain in $\mathbb{C}$ and $q \in C(\Omega)$ an unbounded function with $\sup _{\xi \in \Omega}\{\operatorname{Re} q(\xi)\}<$ $\infty$. Let $X=C_{0}(\Omega)$ together with the supremum norm and $M(X \rightarrow X)$ the maximal multiplication operator corresponding to $q$ and define $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ by

$$
(T(t) f)(\xi)=\mathrm{e}^{t q(\xi)} f(\xi), \quad f \in X, \xi \in \Omega .
$$

(a) Show that $\mathcal{T}$ is a strongly continuous semigroup.
(b) Show that $\mathcal{T}$ is not uniformly continuous.
(c) Show that $M$ is the generator of $\mathcal{T}$

A semigroup is called uniformly exponentially stable if there exist $\omega>0$ and $M \geq 1$ such that $\|T(t)\| \leq M \mathrm{e}^{-\omega t}$ for all $t \geq 0$.
2. Let $X=C_{0}(\mathbb{R})$ and $q(s)=-\frac{1}{1+|s|}+\mathrm{i}$. Show that the corresponding multiplication semigroup is not uniformly exponentially stable but converges strongly to 0 .
3. If $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ is a uniformly continuous semigroup, then the following is equivalent:
(a) $\mathcal{T}$ is uniformly exponentially stable.
(b) $\lim _{t \rightarrow \infty}\|T(t)\|=0$.
(c) There exists a $t_{0}>0$ such that $\left\|T\left(t_{0}\right)\right\|<1$.
(d) There exists a $t_{1}>0$ such that $r\left(T\left(t_{1}\right)\right)<1$ where $r\left(T\left(t_{1}\right)\right)$ denotes the spectral radius of $T\left(t_{1}\right)$.
4. Let $X$ be a Banach space and $K \subseteq \mathbb{R}$ a compact set. For a function $F: K \rightarrow$ $L(X)$ the following is equivalent:
(a) $F$ is strongly continuous
(b) $F$ is uniformly bounded on $K$ and there exists a dense subset $D \subseteq X$ such that for every $x \in D$ the following map is continuous:

$$
K \rightarrow X, \quad t \mapsto F(t) x .
$$

(c) For every compact subset $C \subseteq X$ the following map is uniformly continuous:

$$
K \times C \rightarrow X, \quad(t, x) \mapsto F(t) x .
$$

Let $X$ be a Banach space and $X_{0} \subseteq X$ a subspace. For a linear operator $A$ with not necessarily dense domain $\mathcal{D}(A) \subseteq X$ we define the part of $A$ in $X_{0}$ by

$$
\mathcal{D}\left(A_{\mid}\right)=\left\{x \in \mathcal{D}(A) \cap X_{0}: A x \in X_{0}\right\}, \quad A_{\mid} x=A x, \quad x \in \mathcal{D}\left(A_{\mid}\right) .
$$

1. Let $X$ be a Banach space, $A: \mathcal{D}(A) \subseteq X \rightarrow X$ a closed linear operator on $X$ (not necessarily densely defined). Let $X_{0}:=\frac{X}{\mathcal{D}(A)}$ and $A_{1}$ be the part of $A$ in not necessarily densely defined). Let $X_{0}:=$
$X_{0}$. If there exist $M \geq 1$ and $\omega \in \mathbb{R}$ such that

$$
\{\lambda \in \mathbb{R}: \lambda>\omega\} \subseteq \rho(A) \quad \text { and } \quad\left\|R(\lambda, A)^{n}\right\| \leq \frac{M}{(\lambda-\omega)^{n}}, \quad n \in \mathbb{N}, \lambda>\omega,
$$

then $A_{\mid}$is the generator of a strongly continuous semigroup $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ on $X_{0}$ with $\|T(t)\| \leq M \mathrm{e}^{t \omega}, t \geq 0$.
2. Let $(X,\|\cdot\|)$ be a Banach space and $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ a bounded strongly continuous semigroup on $X$. Then

$$
\|x\|_{\mathcal{T}}:=\sup \{\|T(s) x\|: s \geq 0\}, \quad x \in X
$$

defines a norm which is equivalent to $\|\cdot\|$
3. Let $(X,\|\cdot\|)$ be a Banach space and $\mathcal{T}=(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ a bounded strongly continuous semigroup on $X$. Show that there exists an equivalent norm on $X$ such that $\mathcal{T}$ is a contraction semigroup with respect to the new norm.
4. Let $X=\{f \in C[0,1]: f(1)=0\}$ and

$$
T(t): X \rightarrow X, \quad T(t) f(\xi)= \begin{cases}f(\xi+t), & \text { if } 0 \leq x+t \leq 1 \\ 0 & \text { else. }\end{cases}
$$

Show that $(T(t))_{t \geq 0}$ is a strongly continuous semigroup on $X$. Find its generator and its growth bound.

## Index

$\mathbb{R}_{+}, 39$
$\mathrm{G}(T), 7$
$K(X, Y), 11$
$R(\lambda, T)$,
$A_{1}, 60$
$B[a, b], 15$
I $[a, b], 15$
$[a, b], 15$
$L(X, Y), L(X), 4$
, 31
07 T-convergent $T$-convergent, 31
$T[a, b], 15$
$E_{\lambda}, 17$
$\omega_{0}, 45$
$s(A), 56$
$\operatorname{var} \alpha, 15$
$\alpha(T), 12$
$\delta(T), 12$
$\Sigma_{\varphi}, 70$
$\Sigma_{\varphi}, 70$
$n(S, z), 22$
abstract Cauchy problem, 42 adjoint operator

Banach space $\sim, 8$
Hilbert space $\sim, 8$
nalytic semigroup ,
analytic semigroup,
autonomous,
Banach space, 3
Banach-Steinhaus theorem, 6
bounded $C_{0}$-semigroup, 44
$C_{0}$-semigroup, 43
$C_{0}(\Omega), 50$
Cauchy's integral formula, 69
classical solution, 55
closable operator, 7
closed graph theorem, 7
closed operator, 7
compact operator, 1
spectrum, 12
contraction semigroup, 44
contractive $C_{0}$-semigroup, 44
deficiency number, 22
descent, 12
diffusion semigroup, 63 dissipative operator, 63
duality set, 65
essential spectrum, 33
$\exp (t A), 45$
Fréchet-Riesz representation theorem, 5
functional calculus, 69
generator, 50, 52
strongly continuous group, 59
graph, 7
graph norm, 7
group, 42
growth bound, 45
Hahn-Banach theorem, 5
heat equation, 41
Hellinger-Toeplitz theorem,
Hilbert space, 4
inner product, 3
inner product space, 3 inverse mapping theorem, 6 isometric $C_{0}$-semigroup, 44

Jordan normal form, 47
Kato-Rellich theorem, 32
Laplace transform, 56
matrix semigroups, 46
monoid, 39
multiplication operator, 50 multiplication semigroup, 50, 56
norm, 3
normed space, 3
open map, 6
open mapping theorem, 6
operator
closable $\sim, 7$

| closed $\sim, 7$ |
| :--- |
| closure $\sim, 7$ |
| compact $\sim, 11$ |
| dissipative, 63 |
| essentially selfadjoint $\sim, 9$ |
| sectorial, 70 |
| selfadjoint $\sim, 9$ |
| spectrum of a $\sim, 9$ |
| part of $A, 60$ |
| point of regular type, 24 |
| pre-Hilbert space, 3 |
| projection, 10 |
| orthogonal, 10 |
| $\mathbb{R}_{+}, 39$ |
| regularity domain, 24 |
| relatively bounded, 31 |
| relatively compact, 31 |
| resolent map, 10 |
| resolvent set, 9 |
| Riesz index, 12 |
| Riesz representation theorem, 6 |
| $s(a), 56$ |
| scaling, 68 |
| Scaling, 55 |
| Schwartz space, 63 |
| sectorial operator, 70 |
| selfadjoint operator, 9 |
| semi-Fredholm, 33 |
| semigroup, 39,42 |
| analytic, 72 |
| bounded, 44 |
| contractive, 44 |
| isometric, 44 |
| strongly continuous, 43 |
| uniformly continuous, 42,49 |
| unitary, 67 |
| seminorm, 3 |
| sesquilinear form, 3 |
| solution |
| classical, 55 |
| space |
| normed $\sim, 3$ |
| spectral bound, 56 |
| spectral family, 17 |
| spectral resolution of the identity, 17 |
| spectrum, 9 |
| compact operator, 12 |
| essential, 33 |
| step function, 15 |
| symmetric operator, 9 |

## heorem

Banach-Steinhaus $\sim, 6$
closed graph $\sim, 7$
F. Riesz, 16

Fréchet-Riesz representation $\sim, 5$
Hahn-Banach ~, 5
Hellinger-Toeplitz $\sim, 9$
Hille-Yosida, 59
Kato-Rellich, 32
Lumer-Phillips, 66
open mapping $\sim, 6$
Riesz representation $\sim, 6$
Schauder, 12
von Hille-Yosida-Phillips, 57
Weyl, 33
translation semigroup, 62, 63
type, 45
Uniform boundedness principle, 6 unitary semigroup, 67

## variation, 15 von Neumann

formula of, 21

## Weyl theorem, 33

Yosida approximants, 57

